ISSN 2520-4920 (Print) ISSN 2616-4566 (Online)

# Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature

文学路学科研究

Volume 5, Number 2 June 2021



Published by
Knowledge Hub Publishing Company Limited
Hong Kong

# **Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature**

文学跨学科研究

Volume 5, June 2 March 2021

#### **Editor**

Nie Zhenzhao, Zhejiang University

#### **Associate Editors**

Wu Di, Zhejiang University Wang Yong, Zhejiang University

### **Director of Editorial Office**

Yang Gexin, Zhejiang University

### **Published by**

Knowledge Hub Publishing Company Limited Hong Kong

**About:** *Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature* ("ISL") is a peer-reviewed journal sponsored by the Institute for Interdisciplinary Studies of World Literature (Zhejiang University) and published by Knowledge Hub Publishing Company (Hong Kong) in collaboration with the International Conference for Ethical Literary Criticism. With a strategic focus on literary, ethical, historical and interdisciplinary approaches, ISL encourages dialogues between literature and other disciplines of humanities, aiming to establish an international platform for scholars to exchange their innovative views that stimulate critical interdisciplinary discussions. ISL publishes four issues each year in both Chinese and English.

International Conference for Ethical Literary Criticism (ICELC, since 2012) is an annual international conference for academics and research-oriented scholars in the area of literature and related disciplines. ICELC is the flagship conference of the International Association for Ethical Literary Criticism which is an international literary and cultural organization aiming to link all those working in ethical literary criticism in theory and practice and to encourage the discussions of ethical function and value in literary works and criticism.

*Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature* is registered with ISSN 2520-4920(print) and 2616-4566(online), and is indexed by Arts and Humanities Citation Index. It is also included in EBSCO, MLA International Bibliography and Annual Bibliography of English Language and Literature.

**Submissions and subscription:** As the official journal of International Association for Ethical Literary Criticism (IAELC), *Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature* publishes articles only from members of IAELC, and their submissions presented in the annual convention and forums will be accepted for publication in priority. Those authors who are not members of IAELC are encouraged to apply for membership of the association before their submissions. All submissions must include a cover letter that includes the author's full mailing address, email address, telephone numbers, and professional or academic affiliation. The cover letter should indicate that the manuscript contains original content, has not previously been published, and is not under review by another publication. Submissions or subscription should be addressed to: isl2017@163.com.

**Contact information:** Editorial office, *Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature*, 6 East Building, Zijingang Campus, Zhejiang University, 866 Yuhangtang Rd, Hangzhou 310058, P.R. China. Tel:+86-571-8898-2010

Copyright ©2017 by *Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature*. All rights reserved. No copy shall be made without the permission of the publisher.

## **Advisory Board**

Massimo Bacigalupo / Università di Genova, ITA

Michael Bell / University of Warwick, UK

Charles Bernstein / University of Pennsylvania, USA

Vladimir Biti / University of Vienna, AT

Shang Biwu / Shanghai Jiaotong University, CHN

Marshall Brown / University of Washington, USA

Galin Tihanov/ Queen Mary University of London, UK

Knut Brynhildsvoll / University of Oslo, NOR

Stefan Collini / University of Cambridge, UK

Khairy Douma / Cairo University, EGY

Barbara Foley / Rutgers University, USA

Su Hui / Central China Normal University, CHN

Luo Lianggong / Central China Normal University, CHN

Byeongho Jung / Korea University, KOR

Anne-Marie Mai / University of Southern Denmark, DEN

Wolfgang Müller / Friedrich-Schiller University Jena, GER

Marjorie Perloff / Stanford University, USA

John Rathmell / University of Cambridge, UK

Claude Rawson / Yale University, USA

Joshua Scodel / University of Chicago, USA

**Igor Shaytanov** / Problems of Literature, RUS

Inseop Shin / Konkuk University, KOR

Wang Songlin / Ningbo University, CHN

## **Contents**

187-190	Ethical Literary Criticism and Korean Literature: An Introduction
	Lim Dae Geun
191-204	The Academic Value of "Chinese School" Ethical Literary Criticism
	Lim Dae Geun
205-218	The Ethics of Empathy: Subversion of the Gaze and Performativity in
	Kim Jiyoung, Born 1982 and It's Okay, That's Love
	Oh Sojeong
219-228	The Ethical Choices of "New Women" in Korean: A Comparative Study
	of Two New Women in "Kyeong-hee" by Na Hye-seok and "Biography
	of Kim Yeon-sil" by Kim Dong-in
	Kim SoonJin
229-240	Women's Trans-identity and Ethical Predicament in The Vegetarian
	Wu Juan
241-254	The Feasibility of Applying Ethical Literary Criticism to Korean Literary
	Education
	Inseop Shin
	Seokmin Yoon
255-267	The Ethical Implications of Virtue in De la littérature by Madame de
	Staël
	Soon-Hee Lee
	Young-ho Lee
268-276	Literary Criticism: A Catalyst for the Fusion of Literature and Ideas
	Jiang Hongxin
277-290	Benjamin's Reading on Baudelaire: From Foucauldian Genealogy of
	Ethics
	Du Yusheng
291-299	The Unity of Knowing and Doing: An Exploration of Nadine Gordimer's
	Burger's Daughter from the Perspective of Ethical Literary Criticism
	Xiao Lihua

300-319 Being of Time vs. Clock Time: Temporal Experience of Modernity in *The Sound and the Fury*Zhang Shiyuan

Yang Jincai

320–335 Community or Utopia: Travels across Boundaries in *Anna Karenina Long Yucheng* 

336-348 Foreign Literature Studies in he Early 20 Years of the New Century: Review and Prospect

> Huang Hui Wang Qinglu

349-361 Mo Yan in the Perspective of Literary Translation Liu Yunhong

362-376 Lin Shu's Ethical Selection and Ethical Identity in His Translating of Western Novels

Chen Yong

### 目 录

- 187-190 文学伦理学批评与韩国文学研究导言 林大根
- 191-204 "中国学派"文学伦理学批评的学术价值 林大根
- 205-218 共鸣伦理:《82 年生的金智英》及《没关系,是爱情啊》的观点与 操演之颠覆 吴笑廷
- 219-228 朝鲜现代"新女性"的伦理选择:比较罗蕙锡《琼嬉》和金东仁《金 妍实传》中的两个新女性 金顺珍
- 229-240 从小说《素食主义者》来看女性的身份认同转换和伦理困境 吴 娟
- 241-254 论文学伦理学批评理论在韩国文学教育上的活用可行性 申寅燮 尹锡珉
- 255-267 斯塔尔夫人的《文学论》中美德的伦理学含义 李顺姬 李荣镐
- 268-276 文学批评:催化文学与思想的融合 蒋洪新
- 277-290 本雅明论波德莱尔:福柯的伦理谱系学解读 杜玉生
- 291-299 知行合一: 纳丁·戈迪默《伯格的女儿》中的文学伦理学解读 肖丽华
- 300-319 存在时间与钟表时间:《喧哗与骚动》中的现代性时间体验 张诗苑 杨余才

- 320-335 共同体或乌托邦:《安娜·卡列尼娜》中的跨界之旅 龙瑜宬
- 336-348 新世纪 20 年的外国文学研究:回顾与前瞻 黄 晖 王青璐
- 349-361 文学译介视野中的莫言 刘云虹
- 362-376 林纾小说翻译过程中的伦理选择与译者伦理身份 陈 勇

# **Ethical Literary Criticism and Korean Literature: An Introduction**

#### Lim Dae Geun

Hankuk University of Foreign Studies, Korea

Email: rooot@hufs.ac.kr

Ethical literary criticism suggests the task of analyzing, deciphering and evaluating literary works from the ethical perspectives. Recently, ethical literary criticism is expanding the academic field in two directions. One is the tendency to explore the interaction between literature and other disciplines. Discussions have already begun on the relationship between ethical literary criticism and social sciences such as political science, media studies, and cultural studies as well as humanities such as philosophy, aesthetics, and history. In 2019, in the 3<sup>rd</sup> issue of Volume 11 of Forum for World Literature Studies, it featured a special issue of academic papers focusing on ethical literary criticism. Through the list of this paper, we can examine the achievements of academic discussions on the correlations with other disciplines mentioned earlier. Another is the tendency to apply the methodology of ethical literary criticism to national literature. Chinese scholars have been striving for a long time to study ethical literary criticism and starting to show a meaningful outcome. In 2020, a group of scholars including Xu Bin, Su Hui, Li Exian, and Huang Hui wrote academic books published by Peking University Press, which explores the relationship among British literature, American literature, Japanese literature, and Chinese literature.

This special issue was inspired by such academic trends. The process in which ethical literary criticism and various world literatures encounter means that ethical literary criticism is not just a kind of abstract methodology for studying literature, but a very specific text analysis process. This means a synchronic expansion of ethical literary criticism. In addition, the text analysis of national literature conducted from the perspective of ethical literary criticism naturally has no choice but to deals with the classics, modern and contemporary literature that the related literature has dealt with in the history of literature. Therefore, this means a diachronic expansion of ethical literary criticism. Thus this expansion into synchronic and diachronic context shows that ethical literary criticism is establishing its status as a universal theoretical system and methodology.

Ethical literary criticism can also be claimed as a useful methodology in analyzing, deciphering, and evaluating Korean literature. Korean literature has traditionally created its identity written in Chinese and Korean characters. After the modern era, during the Japanese occupation period, some writers practiced their writings in Japanese. However, as writing in Korean soon became a universal way, it was possible to express Korean's own ideas, emotions, and ethics. Korean modern and contemporary literature have also dealt with issues of ethical choices and ethical conflicts that permeate people's lives through various sanctions. It goes without saying that the academic work dealing with the ethical agenda in Korean literature can also use the methodology of ethical literary criticism. In this special issue, we introduce five papers on analyzing and deciphering Korean literature texts citing the methodology of ethical literary criticism.

Lim Dae Geun discusses the academic meaning of ethical literary criticism in the article "The Academic Value of 'Chinese School' Ethical Literary Criticism." He regards literary ethics as a complex concept in which the three terms "literature," "ethics," and "criticism" are combined, and tries to discuss its fundamental meaning through the process of combining these terms. In addition, "ethics" is regarded as the central concept among three, and the historical conceptualization process of the term 'ethics' is examined from the etymological aspect. He defines human being as "placed in the net of ethical standards, ethical environment, and ethical selection, human subjects always become a being in conflict with values that cannot be attained." He examines meaning and achievements of Professor Nie Zhenzhao's academic discourse, who laid the foundation for this discussion, naming it "Chinese School Ethical Literary Criticism." In particular, he introduces the situation in which this discourse is being practiced as a concrete methodology for analyzing and deciphering world literary texts. Through these discussions, he provides theoretical evidences to show that ethical literary criticism can be applied to the process of analyzing and deciphering Korean literature.

Kim Soon Jin analyzes the text of modern Korean literature from the perspective of ethical literary criticism in "The Ethical Choices of "New Women" in Korean: A Comparative Study of Two New Women in Kyeong-hee by Na Hyeseok and Biography of Kim Yeon-sil by Kim Dong-in," She pays attention to the representation of women in modern literature, and the literature text chosen for her specific discussion is Na Hye-seok's "Kyung-hee" and Kim Dong-in's "Biography of Kim Yeon-sil." Na Hye-seok (1896-1948) was a novelist, poet, painter, sculptor, and women's activist in modern Korea, more precisely, during the Japanese colonial period. Kim Dong-in (1900-1951) was a male novelist who lived in the same era with Na Hye-seok, and is one of the leading writers in the history of modern Korean literature. Their era was called the "Enlightenment Period," and the emergence of "New Women" was a phenomenon that symbolized the characteristics of that time. This study shows how the society at that time ethically accepted or rejected these "new women" through the representative works of the two writers. The acceptance of "new women" is closely related to admiration for the modern era. However, men at the time showed an ambivalent attitude toward these "new women." They emphasize the male-centered traditional ethic that gives importance to the female chastity, and there lies criticism and vigilance toward women emerging as consumer subjects.

Wu Juan's "Women's Trans-identity and Ethical Predicament in The Vegetarian" focuses on contemporary Korean literature text. The Vegetarian is a short story written by Han Kang (1970-). Han Kang is one of the representative female writers of contemporary Korean literature. Her work, The Vegetarian, won the Man Booker Award in 2016, making her even more internationally known. Wu Juan's study interprets the *The Vegetarian* as a story in which a woman resists the banality of evil, the most overlooked animal factor. The attempt to explain the ethical agenda through the keyword animal factor originated from the theory of Prof. Nie Zhenzhao. The concept of "banality of evil" created by Hannah Arendt is considered to exist not only in the political domain, but also in the domain of private assumptions. However, this banality of evil is not easy to distinguish when obscured by various ethical identities in families. The protagonist of the novel carries out her identity transformation into her vegetarian through the process of transposing the oppression (evil) she suffered from her family with "meat." Wu attempts to clarify the literary logic through the combination of the concept of transidentity claimed by Lim Dae Geun and ethical literary criticism. Identity transformation is a means of resistance, which turns out to fail. The ethical predicament faced by the protagonist is a problem that transcends nationality and gender, thus revealing that evil is not a work of the devil, but an issue of ordinary individual's ethical choice.

Oh So Jeong's work, "The Ethics of Empathy: subversion of the gaze and performativity in Kim Jiyoung, Born 1982 and It's Okay, That's Love," also deals with women issues in contemporary Korean literature. Kim Jiyoung, Born 1982 is a novel published in 2018 by Cho Nam-joo (1978-), and was evaluated as bringing the social problems faced by today's young Korean women into literary agenda. It also has received a lot of attention overseas as it has been translated into several languages. It was also recreated into a movie thanks to the favorable responses. It's Okay, That's Love is a novel published 2016 by Roh Hee-kyung (1966-). This study emphasizes the importance of "empathy," which goes one step further from ethical lessons while analyzing the narratives of the two texts. After setting up a framework for discussion through the methodology of ethical literary criticism claimed by Prof. Nie Zhenzhao, she explores the need for changes in gender prejudice prevalent in Korean society by adding discussions between Jean Paul Sartre and Judith Butler. And she concludes that the two texts pursue the ethics of empathy through the process of overthrowing the gaze and the reader's performance.

Shin In Seop and Yoon Seok Min open a discourse on the education of Korean literature through their work, "On the Feasibility of Applying Ethical Literary Criticism to Korean Literary Education." In particular, this study focuses on Korean diaspora literature and multicultural literature. First of all, they hope that the ethical literary criticism theory will be able to bear the responsibility of ethics education through the awareness that ethics education is gradually shrinking in middle and high school education in Korea. Furthermore, they examine the possibility that various basic concepts of ethical literary criticism can be applied in the field of Korean literature education. For specific practice, cases are studied in these works such as Korean Japanese author Lee Hoe-seong's (1935-) novel Basin (1992), Son Hong-gyu's (1975-) novel Islamic Butcher Shop (2004), and Ha Jong-oh's (1954-) poem, "One Asian" (2004). This study deals with the issues of ethical environment, ethical identity, ethical value, and ethical discourse contained in these texts, and argues that ethical values should be more respected through literary ethics education in Korean institutional education.

Therefore, this special issue is composed of studies on the theory, practice, and application of ethical literary criticism. The first article confirms the theoretical meaning and status of ethical literary criticism. The second to fourth articles analyze and decipher important agendas of modern and contemporary Korean literature, such as women's issues and gender issues from the perspective of ethical literary criticism. The fifth article examines the means and meanings of ethical literary criticism that can be used in the field of middle and high school education. In conclusion, this special issue shows that ethical literary criticism can be applied from the practical level of criticism of Korean literature to applicative level of education, based on the theoretical level. Furthermore, it confirms that ethical literary criticism can be extended to various interdisciplinary studies ranging from ethics to philosophy, gender, and cultural studies.

# The Academic Value of "Chinese School" Ethical Literary Criticism

#### Lim Dae Geun

Abstract: This study examines the academic significance of ethical literary criticism. First of all, according to the premise that ethical literary criticism is a complex concept of three conceptual words, we will explore how "literature," "ethic," and "criticism" are articulated, and discuss what implications each case has. Furthermore, the meaning of "ethic," which can be called the key conceptual word among these three, is verified through the etymology of Western and Eastern. Ethic operates in human society as a norm and principle, and ethics studies human behavior, various problems and standards. Ethics is the reason that people who live in groups and people who make up society should possess. Placed in the net of ethical standards, ethical environment, and ethical selection, human subjects always become a being in conflict with values that cannot be attained. The ethical situations openly emerge in times of social transformation. This is because the society in transformation is in a state of confusion and transition with dismantled old order and incomplete new order. Professor Nie Zhenzhao is a scholar who pioneered the discourse of ethical literary criticism in the Chinese school. Based on criticizing Western literary criticism, his discussion establishes claims on the moral and instructive functions of literature through ethical literary criticism, and applies them to practical criticism on world literature.

**Key words:** ethical literary criticism; literary criticism; ethics, ēthos; Chinese School; Nie Zhenzhao

**Author:** Lim Dae Geun is Professor at the Hankuk University of Foreign Studies, Manager of Foreign Literature Institute. His recent research is mainly focused on comparative literature and culture between Korea and China, cultural identity and storytelling. This work was supported by Hankuk University of Foreign Studies Research Fund (Email: rooot@hufs.ac.kr).

标题: "中国学派"文学伦理学批评的学术价值

内容摘要:本文探讨文学伦理学批评的学术意义。首先,本文把文学伦理学 批评视作由"文学"、"伦理"和"学"三大概念构成的综合概念,对这三 个概念的链结 (articulation) 方式及其含义展开论述。其次,本文从东西方词源 着手,对上述三大概念之核心——"伦理"概念进行诠释。伦理指的是人类 社会的运作规范及原理,伦理学是一门研究人类行为和规范的学问。所谓伦 理,指的是群体中的个体和社会中的个人所必备的品德。置身于由伦理标准、 伦理环境及伦理选择所织成的伦理之网中, 人类主体永远无法抵达伦理的彼 岸,因此不可避免地成为矛盾的综合体。伦理问题在社会转型期显得尤为突出。 这是因为在转型中的社会里, 旧的秩序正在瓦解、新的秩序尚未建立, 一切 都处于混沌的过渡状态之中。聂珍钊教授是中国学派文学伦理学批评话语的 创始者。他的理论建立在批判西方文学批评的基础上,通过文学伦理学批评 提出了文学的道德建树及教诲意义的创见,并将其广泛应用于世界各国的文 学批评实践之中。

关键词: 文学伦理学批评; 文学批评; 伦理学; 中国学派; 聂珍钊 作者简介: 林大根, 韩国外国语大学教授、外国文学研究中心总务, 主要从 事韩中文学与文化比较、文化身份认同与叙事学。

#### 1. Segmentation and Articulation in Ethical Literary Criticism

Ethical literary criticism is born by articulation of at least three conceptual words. In other words, it is a complex concept combined with the concepts of "literature," "ethic" (or "ethics") and "criticism." I have said earlier that to describe contemporary issues and events, a complex concept should be employed rather than a single concept. It is due to the qualitative complexity of the world. It was referred to as "Concept is not lonely" (Lim Dae Geun 141-144). Once it is admitted that ethical literary criticism is a complex concept integrated with some single concepts—"literature," "ethic" (or "ethics") and "criticism"—, we can possibly interpret the combination in this following three cases.

Firstly, ethical literary criticism can be regarded as a method of criticism that combines "literature" with "ethics." This method means a parallel join of two academic disciplines: literature and ethics. Then, it is required to explore the academic object and methodology pursued by each discipline, and to examine what kind of meaning the combination produces. The unity can be expressed as "Literature+Ethics" or "Studies on Literature+Studies on Ethics." If criticism is added to the combination of literature and ethics as a combination of academic disciplines, it can be regarded as an expanded format of literature criticism and ethical criticism.

Secondly, "literary ethics," the core concept of ethical literary criticism, can be regarded as a combination of "literary ethics" and "study." This position represents the academic position on literary ethics. The subject of the study can be literary ethics that encompasses ethics of writer, work and reader. However, it is necessary to reconsider the methodology. In other words, it is the outcome of a combination of research subjects and activities as "Studies on Literary Ethics." Even if criticism is added here, we can confirm the pattern in which the subject and act of criticism are combined as well.

Thirdly, ethical literary criticism can be regarded as a combination of the three concepts of "literature," "ethics," and "study." This method explains the implications each element has. This combination can be considered together adding to the concept of criticism. In other words, "studies" means "criticism," "literature" refers to the original text as an object of study or criticism, and "ethics" refers to the standard of study or criticism. Therefore, this combination allows us to identify the object of study/criticism, the method of study/criticism, and the conduct of study/ criticism as "Ethical Studies on Literature" or "Ethical Critiques on Literature."

This idea was derived from the process of examining the academic and critical performance of Professor Nie Zhenzhao (聂珍钊), who is actively leading theoretical and practical criticism on ethical literary criticism. Professor Nie systematically discloses his ideas through an academic work entitled Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism (文学伦理学批评导论 2014). This article looks forward to further related academic discussions by looking into the theoretic frame of ethical literary criticism presented in the book and strengthening its understanding.

Previously, we looked into the issue of approaching ethical literary criticism as a segmented concept. Professor Nie says that "literary ethics" and "ethics literary criticism" are closely related, but not completely consistent. Examining the two categories, it can be seen that literary ethics covers ethical literary criticism. Ethical literary criticism is the core of the discourse of literary ethics and plays a role in enriching it. Of course, there are also differences between the two. According to him, first of all, "Ethical literary criticism is a research method that studies problems related to writers and literature by reading, analyzing, and interpreting literary works from in terms of ethics" while "literary ethics, based on the theory and principles of ethics, writers, readers, and critics explore and solve the problem of values that distinguish between right/wrong or good/evil in the process of literary creation, reading, and criticism." Second, "Ethical literary criticism values criticism and interpretation, whereas literary ethics focuses on establishing standards and evaluating good and evil." Third, "ethical literary criticism focuses on criticizing and interpreting ethical issues depicted in literary works while literary ethics emphasizes a matter of moral value in which writers create works, readers read literary works, and critics evaluate literary works. In other words, for example, more emphasis is placed on the moral training of writers and critics, professional morality, social responsibility and reader"s position, feelings and the acceptance of lessons in reading" (Nie Zhenzhao 99).

In other words, literary ethics deals with literary fields such as creation, reading, criticism, literary education, and literary awards from an academic perspective, while, on the other hand, ethical literary criticism is mainly concerned with reading of literary field. Nevertheless, the values and functions pursued by literary ethics and ethical literary criticism are similar. "By displaying the value of literature itself, it satisfies the literary needs of readers and society so that readers can truly improve moral and cultural discipline through reading literature" (Nie Zhenzhao 99). We also see an explanation on ethical literary criticism. It "is a theory and methodology for reading, interpreting, understanding, analyzing and evaluating literature from an ethical standpoint. It argues that literature is a historically contingent presentation of ethics and morality and that reading literature helps human beings to reap moral enlightenment and thus make better ethical choices. The mission of ethical literary criticism is to uncover the ethical value of literature" (Charles Ross 8).

Whether it is literary ethics or ethical literary criticism, it should be argued through the interaction of literature and ethics. Therefore, inspecting the aspects of literature associated with it as well as the concept of ethics, we can get one step closer to the nature of ethical literary criticism.

#### 2. Concept and Value of Ethics

Then, what is Ethics? Ethics researches from human behavior to various issues and norms. Ethics are norms and principles working in human society. The English word "ethic" originated in the Greek word "ethos." In his book, *The Art of Rhetoric*, Aristotle says, "All human behavior must occur for one of the following seven causes: coincidence, nature, coercion, habit, calculation, anger, and desire" (Aristotle 88). The word translated as "habit" was "ethos." Aristotle divides the aspects of human behavior into "intentional acts" or "unintentional acts" and among them, he pointed coincidence and inevitability as the cause of "unintentional acts." The causes of inevitability are coercion and nature. Habits and desires are the causes of "intentional acts." Desire is again distinguished into hope as the rational desire, and anger and craving as irrational desire.

For such a reason, "ēthos," the etymology of ethics, has been pointed out as one of the causes of human behavior. This is understood as a choice that requires a decision as to whether or not a person will perform a specific action. "Ethos" as a word related to human choice behavior means "moral character." Today, "ethics," originated in "ethos" and later transformed into French archaic "etique" and Latin "ēthicē," meaning "knowledge or study dealing with moral principles." It wasn"t until the mid-17th century that this term began to be used in the sense of "moral principles of social or personal value" (OED 2020).

The "ēthos" went further from the meaning of habit to an element that Aristotle suggested as a requirement for persuasion. Aristotle presented three key factors of persuasion; Logos, Pathos, and Ethos. Logos means logic, Pathos means emotion, and Ethos means trust. Pathos refers to the feelings of the persuaded person, and ēthos refers to the trust of the persuader. This trust is formed through the persuader"s ēthos including the figure, dress, voice, gaze, and posture as a "habit." Pathos and ēthos suggest that you scrutinize counterpart"s emotional state when trying to convince the other. Simultaneously, it also means that you should know whether the counterpart trust you to some extent. The interaction of the subject"s trust and the other"s emotions becomes a requirement for creating persuasion. However, the trust of the subject is not made by oneself, but is formed by the other. The other"s emotions must be observed by the subject.

Trust as ēthos cannot be built easily, but is constructed in context. The process of creating a state of trust also requires internal and external interactions. Emotions can be provisional, but they are also structured by the interaction of internal and external situations. Therefore, ēthos and pathos are inseparably related to each other. The concept of "ethics" derived from ēthos is no different. Ethics is the reason for the interaction between the subject and the other. The subject is recognized or rejected by the other through one"s own habits. The other decides recognition or rejection considering the various characteristics of the subject. Therefore, ethics becomes the standard and reason for the relationship created in the complex aspects of the subject and the other.

The English word "ethics" was translated into the Chinese character " 倫理" by Japanese scholars during the enlightenment period and spread to Korea and China (Lee Hanseop 621). " 倫 " consists of " 人 " and " 侖 ." " 侖 " means "to think" describing a person (人) dwelling on thoughts while reading a book (冊). It became " 倫 " with a person (人) added. The ancient Chinese character dictionary Shuo Wen Jie Zi ( 說文解字 ) interprets " 倫 " as "group ( 輩 )." Regarding this, Duan Yucai (段玉裁) of the Qing Dynasty said, "It is called "group" when the military sends out a hundred wagons. Likewise, the meaning is extended that a series of the same kind follows one after another. This is also called "group" ( 軍發

車百兩爲輩,引伸之同類之次曰輩)." Therefore, "倫"is "a group of people." In today's term, it corresponds to "society." The Chinese translation of "ethics" also means an order that must be observed in human relationships. In other words, ethics is the reason that people who live in groups and people who make up society should possess (Xu Shen, noted by Duan Yucai, 1992).

Ethics as a requirement given to social man always constitutes their implications in relationships. We can see the meaning of ethics at some different levels. First, it is ethics as a standard, that is, ethical standards. Ethical standards are justifiable and ideal goals that humans must keep in their lives. This is the consequence of human society in its long history. Second, it is ethics as an environment, that is, an ethical environment. An ethical environment is a situation and an environment driven when a subject cannot approach or cannot help betraying the ethical standards. The ethical environment surrounding an individual or group always creates specific ethical problems in situations where standards are not met. If the subject can fully reach the ethical standards, human society will become a paradise where everything is all good. However, the subject is always thrown into this ethical environment. Third, it is ethics as a choice, that is, ethical selection. Ethical selection refers to the fate of the subject who is thrown to make a selection from various choices presented by the ethical environment. The subject shows mental agony between the legitimate and ideal goal suggested by the ethical standards and the subject's desire. In this way, ethics always deals with the conflict between the presented standard and the subject who cannot reach it.

Ethics involves in the issues of the rational and natural will of subject thrown into society. This framework of discourse is based on theoretical elements extracted from the Sphinx story. Professor Nie extracts the concepts of human factor and animal factor through the Sphinx story, and confirms that these factors are the keys to human ethical selection. Human factor and animal factor are the elements that make up the existence of Sphinx which is a combination of humans and animals. This reminds us that humans are a complex combination of nature and culture. This frame of discussion, which is mentioned by Sigmund Freud's id, ego, and superego, or Lacan's reinterpretation of the imaginary, symbolic, and real world, leads to important questions about human identity as ethical beings. Therefore, ethics issues are closely related to the study on human identity.

The subject is always placed in a social context. Ethical issues are more noticeable in an unstable society than in a stable one. The ethical situation stands out in times of social transformation. This is because the society in transformation is in a state of confusion and transition with dismantled old order and incomplete new order. Thus, the ethical notion is in an uneasy process of transformation. In this uneasy process, the power relationship between the subject and the other is maximized. Ethical issues cannot be considered apart from power relations. For example, following Franz Fanon's discussion, we come across the concept of "ethical recognition," which means the respect for the difference between the subject and the other. The subject and the other acquire ethics through mutual recognition (Pramod K. Nayar, trans. by Ha Sangbok 228). A discussion on recognition can be found in Hegel's words. In his arguments on self-consciousness, the master and the slave in a power relationship build a relationship through a struggle for recognition. However, the power relationship formed in this way is not fixed, but constantly changes through the negation of negation (Lee Spinks, trans. by Lim Seok-Jin 220-234). In this process of denial, change, and transformation, ethical issues push the subject into fundamental agony and anxiety while demanding constant decisions.

Ethics is different from the implications of law or justice, which are other values that make up society. According to Friedrich Nietzsche, "law and justice are interpretations of life created by the dominant force to limit the desire for revenge of the inferior and weak," but "Morality is a unique invention developed by the weak and hostile to exert control over active and noble beings (Lee Spinks, trans. by Yoon Donggu 148). This argument shows that ethics is a discourse that should be discussed in the multi-layered power relationships. Therefore, such a sophisticated matter of ethics becomes a fundamental question for understand ding and explaining human beings. It is impossible to discourse on humans, society, and culture regardless of ethics. Literature, the oldest historical product of human stories as a medium, remains the most essential art genre that makes a discourse process practically possible. In that sense, it can be said there is "the close affinity" between the ethics and literary criticism "as kindred disciplines" (Jovito V. Cariño 384).

#### 3. Ethical literary Criticism by "Chinese School"

Literature is a true reflection of human life. The ethical standards, ethical environment, and ethical selections given to humans create countless ethical issues that we encounter in relationships. Literature has described this situation through the most plausible stories since ancient times.

Ethical literary criticism is an academic attempt to articulate literature and ethics. Professor Nie Zhenzhao insists on the meaning of "literary ethics" on the level of reflecting Western-centered literary criticism. This is a critical practice on orientalism in the field of literary criticism. Ever since modern times, Orientalism has been influential as a method of literary criticism. Professor Nie largely divides

literary criticism that has dominated Chinese literature circles since the reform and opening up into three areas; formalism criticism, cultural research criticism, and political and social criticism. He regards this limitation of criticism as a lack of an ethical stance. He said that "in literature studies such criticism has been studying the relationship between literature and politics, morality, gender, and ethnicity, and has claimed "moral evaluation" or criticism on modern social and culture, but in the end, they returned to their original positions in form, culture, gender, environment, etc. All of them revealed a lack of ethics that the overall characteristic of the basis of criticism (Nie Zhenzhao 3-4).

However, this stance does not mean a return to another Occidentalism. Rather, his position is closer to the side that in the new era, Western criticism and Eastern ethical literary criticism should create a new literary criticism on the basis of ethics while dialogue and encounter. In doing so, it is expected that ethical literary criticism will be able to secure an oriental identity among Western discourses, and will emit a new charm of literary criticism.

Professor Nie "initiated Ethical Literary Criticism in China in the year of 2004. Since then, the new critical paradigm has gained more and more attention in the global intellectual community" (Chen Lizhen 389). He makes his academic position secure by exploring the historical flow of ethical criticism centering on United States. His book, Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism, starts as follows "Since the 1960s, as the civil rights movement, anti-war movement, student movement, women's liberation movement, counter-cultural movement, and environmental protection movement have been promoted, literary criticism theory has emerged that emphasizes the moral view of ethics. For example, feminism, neo-historicism, black literature, and cultural criticism have developed a great flow of ethical criticism" referring Wayne Clayson Booth as "an outstanding scholar representing Western ethical criticism" (Nie Zhenzhao 1). Based on Bachchin's dialogue theory, he believes that his criticism started from the recognition that "the basic task of ethics criticism is to pay attention to the ideology inherent in the work and its impact on the readers."

Nevertheless, Professor Nie sees through the limitations of Western ethical criticism, which has been carried around mainly in the United States. He said the following about the point where American ethical criticism is being criticized.

In the history of Western literature criticism, ethical criticism has always faced skepticism and opposition. One of the important reasons for this is that although ethical criticism has a long origin and can be traced back to ancient Greece, it has not yet established a complete and systematic theoretical system, especially because it lacks its own clear methodology. Even a series of published ethics-related studies do not clearly establish whether ethical criticism is a study on the ethics of literature or a criticism method for studying literature. (Nie Zhenzhao 159).

Therefore, Professor Nie"s ethical literary criticism is an attempt to supplement the limitations of ethical criticism that Western literary critics missed. In order to supplement the criticisms presented above, Professor Nie"s ethics literary criticism establishes a systematic theoretical system and tries to establish a clear methodology. For this purpose, he stipulates that "literature ethical criticism is a criticism method that reads, analyzes, and interprets literature from an ethical perspective", and suggests three literary roles that it should play as follows.

First, "using literary texts as the main subject of criticism, anatomize of each model of ethical selections placed in a specific historical environment in the complex ethical relations of different life phenomena described in the text from the perspective of ethics, namely, human and self, human and other, human and society, and human and nature." Second, "by analyzing the motives and processes of ethical decisions, we reveal the moral inspiration that each choice conveys to us." Third, through this, "providing experiences and lessons for the advancement of human civilization by presenting an effective moral example" (Nie Zhenzhao 5-6).

This effort shows in the pursuit of Chinese ethical literary criticism. The ethical literary criticism he proposed is setting his role as a kind of "Chinese school." The following is a concrete quotation of what the ethical literary criticism aims as a "Chinese School."

- 1. Chinese ethical literary criticism attempted to effectively solve specific literary issues by converting literary ethics to ethical literary criticism methodology.
- 2. Chinese ethical literary criticism regards the teaching functions of literature as the basic function of literature, and theoretically established its own position of ethical literary criticism.
- 3. Chinese ethical literary criticism replaced the concept of ethical criticism with the concept of ethical literary criticism, so that ethical literary criticism was changed from subjective moral criticism to objective criticism, thereby solving the problem of literary criticism and the breakoff of history.
  - 4. As Chinese ethical literary criticism is establishing the its own

terminology such as ethical environment, ethical order, ethical confusion, ethical dilemma, ethical taboo, ethical selection, etc. and discourse system, ethical literary criticism could become a tool to easily control literary criticism. (Nie Zhenzhao 8-9).

The first was to set up a critique methodology of literary ethics to present solutions to specific literary issues. This means that while Western-centered literary ethics has been mainly developed at the level of theory and discourse, it is intended to use it as a useful tool for evaluating literary texts by presenting the methodology of literary ethics at the level of method. Regarding this, Professor Nie said, "From the beginning, the Chinese ethical literary criticism focused on exploring basic theories and constructing a methodology. In particular, the practice of ethical literary critics was regarded as meaningful" (Nie Zhenzhao 9). Many scholars agree that the value of Ethical literary criticism lies in the setting of methodology. For example, in an article on the problem of constructing the theory of Ethical Literary Criticism, Yang Gexin said, "The value lies not only in the theory or criticism itself, but in the methodological value of constructing the criticism theory" (Yang Gexin 3).

The second is related to the debate over the function of literature. Literature functions are generally classified as entertainment/instructive, aesthetic/ethical, personal/community functions. The Chinese ethical literary criticism supports the instructive, ethical, and community function whereas excludes the entertainment, aesthetic, and personal functions. Particularly, the instructive function is regarded as the proper function of literature. Professor Nie said, suggesting the discipline of literature, the goal and function of literature is a moral lesson, not an aesthetic against some perspectives such as "literature is aesthetic art," "the essence of literature is aesthetics" and "the first function of literature is aesthetics." Although, in the process of reading literature, readers enjoy the aesthetic function, it is merely a method and a process for literature to approach a lesson" (Nie Zhenzhao 9).

Third, ethical literary criticism is distinguished from moral criticism. While explaining the concept of ethics earlier, we linked it to "morality," but strictly speaking, ethics and morality have different implications. Of course, it is clear that both are very contiguous concepts. While morality refers to some belief about right and wrong, ethics refers to the normative criterion of human conducts and decisions. Thus, morality includes various levels, from individual to community values, but ethics primarily concerns the value criterion of the social community. Therefore, moral and ethical rightness do not always coincide. Since morality can be a personal level, it can sometimes be against to ethical values. This is in line with the

position that affirms the community functions of literature and denies the individual functions. The argument to distinguish ethical literary criticism from moral criticism means that the evaluation of literature will not be reduced to individual values.

Fourth, the discourse is systematized through critical terms of literary ethics. Professor Nie's work uses various terms related to ethical literary criticism. Terms are the starting point for describing specific objects and phenomena. By creating terms through new naming and conceptualizing them, objects and phenomena can proceed to a new stage of criticism. In particular, brain text, animal factor, sphinx factor, ethical predicament, ethical construction, ethical knots, ethical line, ethical selection, ethical paradox, ethical identity, ethical deconstruction, and ethical chaos are new terms actively used. Of course, some of these may not be the first cases created by Professor Nie, but nonetheless, his attempts to explain his theoretical system by enriching the discourse of ethical literary criticism conceptualizing these terms more elaborately were attributed to him.

Through this process, the "Chinese School" ethical literary criticism can play a different role from the existing literary criticism methodology. The ethical literary criticism of the "Chinese School" showed a clear position on issues such as the debate on the origin of literature, the literary language, and the literary aesthetics.

First, regarding the origin of literature, the labor theory of origin was denied and the ethical expression theory was raised. In other words, it adopted the position that literature was not originated from human labor, but from the desire to express ethics. On that basis, it is considered that the driving force for creating literature is based on "the desire for humanity to share moral experiences" Second, he adopted text theory while denying the existing theory that regards the artistic component of literature as language. It is argued that an opinion that literature is an art of language stems from the confusion between language and text, and that is why literature as text has been relatively disregarded. Therefore, since only texts composed of letters can become literature, it is regarded as "literature is the art of text." Third, it also opposes the position that literature is viewed as an ideology or aesthetic ideology. Regarding this, literary materialism is advocated as "literature exists as a medium of text, that is, in the form of a concrete material text", and "literature is essentially a material form, not an ideology" (Nie Zhenzhao 9).

In order to establish such an argument, Professor Nie conceptualizes it through the fundamental question of "what is literature" and organizes the debates surrounding literature while immersing in the work of comparing the concepts of literature and literary science. The ethical literary criticism established through this process is "not only explaining the characteristics of ethics and morality of literature

or the ethics issues of literary creation, but also from the perspective of ethics and morality studying various phenomena such as literary works, literature and society, literature and writers, and the relationship between literature and readers." The "various phenomena" suggested by Professor Nie are as follows.

(1) The relationship between the artists and their work, the artist's ethical morality, the characteristics and causes of such an idea, the background period, and the process of its formation (2) The influence of the artist's ethical and moral view on the creation (3) The relationship between work and various moral phenomena in real world (4) The question of how literature reproduces the ethical and moral phenomena of reality in the fictional world (5) The moral tendency expressed by the work (6) The relationship between the author's moral view and the moral tendency expressed by the work (7) Depiction of morality performed by the artist in one's work (8) The author's moral evaluation on characters in the work (9) Readers" appreciation of the artist's moral view and the moral tendency of the work (10) Readers" valuation of artist's moral view and moral tendencies of the work (11) The influence of the moral tendency of the work on readers and society (12) The question of how to evaluate the artist and the work from the perspective of ethics (13) The moral view of the artist and the relationship between morality tendency expressed in the work and tradition (14) The influence of the author's moral view and the moral tendency expressed in the work on contemporary and future writers and literature (Nie Zhenzhao 9-10).

Through this process of argument, ethical literary criticism tries to draw a conclusion different from traditional criticism by analyzing the cases of literary texts from both east and west. Professor Nie's text analysis extends from Greek mythology (Oedipus myth) and English literature (Thomas Hardy, Hemingway, Eugene O'Neill) to Chinese modern poem. These texts become a model that can show that the argument of ethical literary criticism can be applied to universal literary texts.

#### 4. Conclusion

This article started with a discussion on how the concept of ethical literary criticism can be established, and examined the fundamental issues that "ethics" should deal with, and ethical literary criticism as a criticism method that articulates literature and ethics as its representational achievements. Especially, by examining the implications and characteristics of ethical literary criticism led by Professor Nie Zhenzhao of China, the possibility of expanding this perspective was also covered. The discussion on ethical literary criticism gained widespread support from literary researchers both in and outside China. The "International Conference on Ethical Literary Criticism" started in 2005 and the "Interdisciplinary University (Graduate) Students" Forum for Ethical Literary Criticism" started in 2020 prove that ethical literary critiques are gaining considerable responses from both the academic and educational levels. We can see the achievements of the academic conferences on the subject of Ethical Literary Criticism in the interview to scholars from 8 countries by Chen Lizhen (Chen Lizhen 389-414). In particular, the efforts of scholars in China are confirmed by the publication of a series of recent research results. They have led the practice of ethical literary criticism on world literature through a series of books, such as A Study on the Theory of Ethical Literary Criticism (文学伦理学 批评理论研究 Nie Zhenzhao & Wang Songlin, 2020), Ethical Literary Criticism of English Literature (英国文学伦理学批评 Xu Bin, 2020), Ethical Literary Criticism of American Literature (美国文学伦理学批评 Su Hui, 2020), Ethical Literary Criticism of Japanese Literature (日本国文学伦理学批评 Li Exian, 2020), Ethical Literary Criticism of Chinese Literature (中国文学伦理学批评 Huang Hui, 2020). The ethical standards that human subjects thrown into the context of society cannot overcome forever and the ethical environment surrounding them, and the problems of ethics selection will be expected to continue to lead more academically active discussions. Furthermore, I hope that the results of this practice can be better accumulated in the criticism of Korean literature.

#### Work Cited

Aristotele. Rhetoric and Poetics. Trans. Cheon Byunghee. Seoul: Soop, 2017.

Ross Charles. "A Conceptual Map of Ethical Literary Criticism: An Interview with Nie Zhenzhao." Forum for World Literature Studies 7.1 (2015): 7-14.

Chen Lizhen. "Rejuvenation and Innovation: The Past, Present and Future of Ethical Literary Criticism." Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 3.3 (2019): 389-414.

Georg Wilhelm Friedrich Hegel. Philosophy of Mind. Trans. Lim Seok-Jin. Seoul: Hangilsa, 2005.

黄晖: 《中国文学的伦理学批评》。北京: 北京大学出版社, 2020年。

[Huang, Hui. Ethical Literary Criticism of Chinese Literature. Beijing: Peking UP, 2020.]

Jovito V. Cariño, "Literary Criticism as a Philosophic Praxis." Forum for World Literature Studies 11.3 (2019): 375-389.

Lee, Hanseop. Dictionary of Korean Words from Japan. Seoul: Korea University, 2014.

Lee Spinks. Friedrich Nietzsche. Trans. Yoon Donggu. Seoul: LP, 2009.

李俄宪: 《日本文学的伦理学批评》。北京: 北京大学出版社,2020年。

[Li, Exian. Ethical Literary Criticism of Japanese Literature. Beijing: Peking UP, 2020.]

Lim, Dae Geun. Cultural Contents Studies. Seoul: Haneum, 2021.

聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。

Nie, Zhenzhao. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.

聂珍钊、王松林:《文学伦理学批评理论研究》。北京:北京大学出版社,2020年。

[Nie, Zhenzhao & Wang, Songlin. A Study on the Theory of Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2020.]

OED. Oxford English Dictionary. London: Oxford University, 2020. (online)

Pramod K. Nayar. Franz Fanon. trans. Ha Sangbok. Seoul: LP, 2013.

苏晖: 《美国文学的伦理学批评》。北京: 北京大学出版社, 2020年。

[Su, Hui. Ethical Literary Criticism of American Literature. Beijing: Peking UP, 2020.]

徐彬:《英国文学的伦理学批评》。北京:北京大学出版社,2020年。

[Xu, Bin. Ethical Literary Criticism of English Literature. Beijing: Peking UP, 2020.]

许慎、段玉裁注: 《说文解字注》。台北: 天工书局,1992年。(影印本)

[Xu, Shen. Note of Shuo Wen Jie Zi. note. Duan Yucai. Taipei: Tiangong Shuju, 1992. (facsimile edition)]

杨革新: "从文学思潮到文学批评理论:文学伦理学批评的理论构建",《文学跨学科研究》5.1 (2021): 1-6.

[Yang Gexin, "From Literary Trends to the Theory of Literary Criticism: The Theoretical Construction of Ethical Literary Criticism." *Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature* 5.1 (2021): 1-6.]

# The Ethics of Empathy: Subversion of the Gaze and Performativity in *Kim Jiyoung, Born 1982* and *It's Okay, That's Love*

#### Oh Sojeong

Abstract: Instead of the ethics lesson revealed in literature, I intend to recognize that 'there are hungry beggars in the society' where we coexist and study this from an empathetic perspective. Sartre constantly questions the role of literature that must be performed. They irritate and disturb. They offer themselves as tasks to be discharged. Kim Jiyoung, Born 1982 strikes the story of a girl growing into a woman and living as one in Korea, while presenting statistics and articles. This novel focuses on recognizing the status quo, regardless of literary excellence. It's Okay, That's Love breaks down the prejudices around us. It calls for a change in perspective on 'abnormal', which has been taboo or distinguished as 'normal'. Through these two works, it raises awareness of situations that someone has not yet recognized. It also supplements Sartre's statement that knowingly but not acting is self-deception and ethically leads to evil. Prescribing and judging that 'an Object' is 'the Something' destroys movements and puts an end to performativity. The ethics of empathy seeks to overthrow the gaze with literature and eventually lead to action. **Key words:** empathy; subversion of the gaze; performativity; *Kim Jiyoung, Born* 1982; It's Okay, That's Love

**Author: Oh Sojeong** is Lecturer at Kangwon National University and Hankuk University of Foreign Studies. Her recent research is mainly focused on comparative literature and culture between Korea and China including narrative analysis (Email: osj@hufs.ac.kr).

**标题:** 共鸣伦理:《82年生的金智英》及《没关系,是爱情啊》的观点与操演之颠覆

内容摘要:本文立足于文学伦理教诲的启蒙之上,考察了文学作品对人们发现"丰饶社会中饥饿乞人之存在"和产生共鸣所起到的积极作用。萨特不断质问文学的作用,指出文学不仅要给读者带来欢乐,还要肩负起令读者感到厌恶,继而付诸行动的艰巨任务。《82年生的金智英》援引了一系列新闻报道和统计资料,向读者呈现了韩国女性的人生经历。作品把文学价值置于次

要地位,将重点放在对现象的认识之上。《没关系,是爱情啊》打破了局限 思维的成见,呼吁改变投向被禁止或被划分为 "不正常"的卑贱者 (abiect) 的视线。上述两部作品,都促进了受众对未曾关注过的问题进行反思。萨特 认为,知之而不为之乃自欺欺人,应归结为伦理之恶。对'某人或某物是怎 么样'下定义和作出判断,就等同于抹煞其运动,终结其操演。通过文学唤 起读者的共鸣、颠覆读者的观点、促进读者的操演, 便是这个时代的的共鸣 伦理。

关键词: 共鸣; 观点的颠覆; 操演; 《82年生的金智英》; 《没关系, 是爱情啊》 作者简介:吴笑廷,韩国江原大学及韩国外国语大学讲师,主要从事包括叙 事分析在内的韩中文学与文化比较研究。

#### 1. Introduction

I am not a literature person, even I studied Shakespeare, Austin and Joyce in youth. When I read Spivak, I asked a very foolish question to my professor. "Why all the critics mentioned the literature, which is very old fashioned and outdated things, or boring." He said, "Literature reflects society and is a measure of universal ethics." It was a very conventional answer. But, yes. It is.

Literature represents our society and conveys ethics prescribed as the universal. To study ethical literature, here are some of Kim Hyun's words on how literature approaches us.

The daydreaming of humans clearly shows how oppressed their actual lives are. Literature is the product of such daydreaming. Literature reveals the distance between the unrealizable dreams of humans and reality against their will. That distance is, in fact, a measure of how oppressed humans are. Literature provides a general idea of human beings. Literature cannot save a hungry beggar. However, literature creates a scandal about the hungry beggar, thereby clearly revealing what oppresses humans. This sharply discloses the self-deception of humans. (Kim Hyun, 'What can literature do?', The Status of Korean Literature 24-25)

Nie Zhen Zhao reviewed literature from an ethical perspective, summarizing the main contents into five segments: an examination of into research on the interpretation of the content of a text; research on the relationship between literature and the real world; research on text and artistic expression; research on writers and creation; and research on the relationship between readers and literary works (Nie 99-100). These five items imply that literature and reality cannot be independent, and their connectivity is evident in several ways. Research on the relationship between literature and the real world "refers to the exploration of the relationship of various moral phenomena that exist in literary works and the real world, explaining the ethical value and moral responsibility that must be shouldered by literature, and focuses on the value of literature that drives social morality education." As such, literature is explained as a universal purpose of education that embraces and describes ethical values blended into the real world. Ethical literature is interpreted as the universal narrative of enlightenment toward readers. Wouldn't ethics inherent in literature today serve as a medium to convey empathy rather than a mere lesson of teaching?

Nie Zhen Zhao explains that ethics is the fundamental of literature. The duty of ethics and the morality inherent in literature is to serve as a mechanism that delivers right or wrong, through which readers gain wisdom in life. However, literature today does not provide such direct enlightenment. Rather, it shows a typical model of reality (or indirectly expresses it). This awakens me and makes me realize what I had forgotten or tried to ignore. There are no laws and lessons; only delivery, and fulfillment, which is something that the subject must think about.

Instead of the ethics lesson revealed in literature, I intend to recognize that 'there are hungry beggars in the society' where we coexist and study this from an empathetic perspective. Through the delivery of literature, the current view of good and evil, or ethical and unethical will be transformed into an indicator of empathy.

#### 2. The Ethics of Literature: From Enlightenment to Empathy

From the Middle Ages, and up to the 19th century, literature served a moral responsibility. Nie Zhen Zhao mentioned that the ethical ideals of the Renaissance were a significant turning point in the development of the Middle Ages into the modern times. As the medieval religious literature that crushed humanity declined, humanist literature emerged and delivered the joys of life (Nie 115-116). The moral theme of humanist literature was to express and sing about the ordinary life of secular humans. Literary works of the time not only met moral standards but also made us perceive what moral view literature must follow. In terms of the development of ethics, there was a strong tie between literature and ethics in Renaissance literature, and as Petrarca said, the humanist moral view was basically sentimental. However, since it was believed that Renaissance literature must give a sense of happiness, literary works sang of happiness. We see this in the plays and poems of Shakespeare and the novels by Cervantes and Rabelais; all of them are

based on the idea of emotional pleasure. The criticism for this is that, due to the benchmark and core set by morality, those failing to meet those standards were not transferred into the objects of literature. Moreover, although those literary works transcribed the daily life of humans, they are not narratives about alienated people.

Things were not so different in the 19<sup>th</sup> century. Ethical and moral ideas converged with literary themes, and literary works described and expressed the moral problems and topics of the times. They evaluated the moral actions of society and individuals and brought up moral ideals of their own (Nie 121). During this time, writers gained eternal ideological and artistic values through moral topics. Humans represented the reason and righteousness described in the literature while non-human beings were defined as others. Those understood as humans were those in the form provided by societal standard. A combination of a human and an animal, like the sphinx, was not a mysterious being but an object of ostracism or a monster. As such, the 'evolution' of animals into humans who could reason is an example that explains the essence of ethics. The animal nature has a reason, obtaining learning systems like enlightenment or discipline. In other words, the mechanism of ethics is the process in which an object with only desire finds a reason.

In the twentieth century, the value system of Western tradition ethics was destroyed by the global economic crisis and war. The anxiety of the times was an existential response to future uncertainty. Human life is naturally accompanied by uncertainty, but things can get even worse when society changes rapidly or loses its bearings. Aren't the increasing anxiety and uncertainty of the future signs that build up the pessimism of our times? Moreover, there was universal skepticism and criticism over modern moral philosophy, as well as the emergence of the mental crisis of capitalism. Here, critics criticized traditional ethics from different perspectives.

Jean-Paul Sartre made clear the writer's duty, it will challenge the alienation of work, as well as it will present man as creative action. So it goes along with him in his effort to pass beyond his present alienation toward a better situation (Sartre 2005 236). Sartre's creation of literature was like applying ethical colors to the base of existentialism. The ethical tendency of his literature is equally found in other twentieth century writers. In other words, contemporary ethical ideas with roots in twentieth-century politics, economy, society, and culture are also implemented in literary arts after the century. Yet, it is emphasized that there was no widespread general morality compared to that before the twentieth century; there are no indicators (Sartre 2008 51).

The question is this: Is ethics the standard for the valuation of literature?

Richard Posner and Wayne Booth take different stances of aesthetics and ethics regarding the precise standard for evaluating literature (Nie 156). Posner argued that the evaluation of literature must be aesthetic, since literature is not to build an upright perspective about religion, politics, economic, or moral problems but to learn excellent self-expression as well as values and experiences far from our culture, times, and sensitivity(Posner 1). In other side, Booth claimed that it was wrong to criticize the ethical perspective in the aesthetic discourse (Booth 366). The discussion between these two scholars can be noted as an interest in ethical criticism in literature. I cannot entirely agree with Posner's focus of literary value on aesthetics, but I agree with his argument that we obtain values and experiences through literature. Moreover, the extreme example provided by Booth is not practical in actually evaluating literature. Yet, the ethical view on literature can be considered as an act of pursuing a diversity of literary criticism.

Compared to other valuations of literature, how does Korea fare? Does Korean literature today speak about the impoverishment and alienation of our society, rather than just recklessly and simply expressing rage against aesthetic excellence? Some of Korean writers have expressed the view that literature is not a movement to chant slogans, and this view is based on the awareness that political values cannot be an aesthetic object (Heo 236-237). Korean literature proposes pure literature, indicating that it is wary of taking a certain stance. While it is passive about the topic of feminism or the authority of minorities, it constantly discusses political views, such as national division or pro-democracy movements. In other words, Korean literature has been speaking in the voices of heterosexuals, men and laborers since modern times. How are the voices of minorities in Korean literature perceived?

The criticisms on the celebrity embroiled in controversy for reading the book Kim Jiyoung, Born 1982, and the actress who played the leading role for the movie based on that book, show that the feminist movement causes conflicts in the Korean society. Regarding such conflicts, Jacques Ranciere claims that when literature as an aesthetic object starts to disrupt the existing order of division, literature no longer exists as an aesthetic object, but transforms into a political act (Ranciere 2011 83-107). I am not about to pursue advancement in Korean literature by promoting feminism in this paper. In addition to the perspective on gender difference, I intend to suggest the need to sense and relate to others outside the 'us' defined as normal people in the society, including heterosexuals, non-disabled, people without mental illnesses, and laborers. These are the others that are lagging behind. I want to state that we can sense and relate to others through literature as a material that can cause

a rift in the fixed society. The wave of empathy or movement of criticism in our society can be understood as the activity of literature.

Sartre constantly questions the role of literature that must be contemplated and performed.

...we, on the contrary, have been led by circumstances to bring to light the relationship between being and doing in the perspective of our historical situation. Is one what one does? What he makes of himself? In presentday society, where work is alienated? What should one do, what end should we choose today? and how is it to be done, by what means? What are the relationships between ends and means in a society based on violence? (Sartre 2005 236-237)

Ranciere claimed the rupture in the logic of Arche in discussing democracy (Ranciers 1995). He talked about predicting and severing domination, and about the destruction of form that defines a specific subject. Destroying forms of domination prescribed as head intellectual, chest soldier, and leg laborer breaks the habituated and standardized thoughts. Ranciere's arguments not only apply to the destruction of system, but also can be regarded as a new understanding of the fixed role of men and women, as well as an awakening of the stereotyped awareness of the society. It is necessary to recall the role of literature as an attempt to read the changing phenomena and change the stereotypes.

#### 3. Cracking in Prejudice: Normal and Abnormal

Let us look into stories of empathy delivered by literature. Kim Jiyoung, Born 1982(hereinafter referred to as Kim Jiyoung), which was popular in 2016 and It's Okay, That's Love (hereinafter referred to as It's Okay), published after it had been produced as a TV series, are presented as the texts of empathy. In the literary world, they might not be regarded as traditional literary fiction or excellent work. One is a novel with footnotes whereas the other is a novel based on a TV series. Kim Jiyoung was first published as a novel and was later turned into a movie. On the other hand, It's Okay was a successful TV series. They were both well received by the public beyond the category of literature, and they are good enough materials that reflect our society today and understand all kinds of people.

In terms of content and format, Kim Jiyoung is not an outstanding novel. As implied by the title, it is a story about Kim Jiyoung who was born in 1982, and it does not have an extraordinary format. Then why was this undistinguished novel well received by the public? Virginia Woolf classifies the transmission of feminist novels by the narrative character, which is whether the novel fully delivers the author's intentions (Woolf 54). We can reflect on literary value and ethical accomplishments in literature through Woolf's review. According to her discourse, literature read for a long time does not deliver the author's own 'rage' but 'wisely' reveals it while keeping a level head for the characters. Oh Gil-young compared novels about labor in the 1980s and examined the trend of feminist novels in the 2000s. He reviewed Kim Jiyoung as accusatory literature or tendency literature that reveals the typicality of the society and put off his decision on whether it is a good novel as literature (Oh). I support the writer's communication in the ethical presentation of understanding others by deriving the narrative object and empathy, instead of seeking discussion about the literary excellence of Kim Jiyoung.

Kim Jiyoung strikes a responsive chord by delivering the story of a girl growing into a woman and living as one in Korea, while also presenting statistics and articles. The author's direct intervention can be criticized for deteriorating literary value, but this qualitatively proves the reality of our society. The book thereby promotes empathy with the delivery of facts. I chose Kim Jiyoung to sense and relate to the present because of its format that boldly breaks free from the typical form of literature.

"... the very height of the male-to-female ratio imbalance, when the ratio for the third child and beyond was over two-to-one." Sex Ratio at Birth by Birth Order, Statistics Korea (19), "...lots of girls are class monitors these days. Over 40 percent!" 'Girls Can Be School Presidents, Too!', Hankyoreh News, 4 May 1995(37), "In 1999, the year Kim Eunyoung turned twenty, new legislation against gender discrimination was introduced, and in 2001, the year Kim Jiyoung turned twenty, the Ministry of Gender Equality was formed." Ministry of Gender Equality and Family (60), "In 2005, ... a survey by a job search web site found that only 29.6 percent of new employees at 100 companies were women, and it was even mentioned as a big improvement." '2005 Job Market with Key Words', Dong-A Ilbo, 14 December 2005 (8.3) "...among recruiting managers of fifty large corporations, 44 percent of respondents chose that they 'would rather hire male to female candidates with equivalent qualifications', and none chose 'would hire women over men'. 'Persistent Discrimination Based on Gender and Appearance in Employment', Yonhap News, 11 July 2005 (p.83), "The gender pay gap in Korea is the highest among the OECD countries. According to 2014 data, women wprking in Korea earn only 63 percent of what men earn; the OECD average percentage is 84." Gender wage gap, 2014, OECD (113), "Korea was also ranked as the worst country in which to be a working woman, receiving the lowest scores amon the nations surveyed on the glass-ceiling index by the British magazine The Economist." 'The Best and Worst Places to Be a Working Women', The Economist 3 March 2016 (113) etc.

While inserting articles and statistical data directly in the text makes the novel seem like analytical data, this action increases the persuasive power and concreteness in portraying the life of women around Kim Jiyoung at the time. Moreover, instead of being limited to emotional empathy with others, it contributes to having a new understanding of situations that we had not been aware of before.

Jacques Derrida sought a new turnaround with "Letters are not just letters but an exit for liberation" (Derrida 1998). This turns voices and discourses fluttering without shape into letters and distributes them. Texts in writing archive the situations of the times, and readers read them to make room for their own thoughts. Kim Jiyoung has a literary value that contains the rage that Woolf perhaps had been concerned about, talking about the tendency of the times and making accusations. Yet it has significance as a literary work that recorded the abstract discourse of women in Korea, presenting ethics through empathy that must be changed with time. The struggle not to be defined as a housewife, a woman, or a mother—leaving room for change by facing the reality through Kim Jiyoung, sensing the difference and relating to it—is the ethics that can be suggested by literature today. This is the ethical literature that can be read from Kim Jiyoung. And finding a breakthrough with others around us instead of merely empathizing with the characters is true performativity through literature. The relationship between me and the other boils down to Sartre's engagement.

The main narrative of It's Okay is awareness of others. Unlike Kim Jiyoung, It's Okay does not limit the characters to women, but features characters that are not considered 'normal' in our society or subjects that had once been normal but that had faded in existence and had become alienated, no longer receiving attention in everyday life. It's Okay delivers the idea that it is only natural that these people exist next to us in our society. The delivering is a movement not to be recognized as the mainstream defined by the society but to be referred to and acknowledged as nonmainstream. Not a single one of the characters is normal. Or rather, they cannot be expressed by the word 'normal' that uses the universal yardstick. With their own stories, they are labeled as 'abnormal'.

Hea-soo (H), whose father was partially paralyzed due to an accident and who witnessed her mother kissing another man, is traumatized about making physical contact with the opposite sex in romantic relationships. Jea-yel (J) is a bestselling writer but is schizophrenic due to his father's death and guilt over his brother. Sooguang with Tourette's disorder, So-neo with a conduct disorder, and patients who live a rather ordinary life aside from their mental illnesses. And yet, others do not see them as ordinary. It's Okay is in line with Hegelian ideas that blur the lines between normal and abnormal and turn them around.

Judith Butler names this the possibility of injurious speech. "One is not simply fixed by the name that one is called. In being called an injurious name, one is derogated and demeaned. But the name holds out another possibility as well"(Butler 1). Possibility begins from the fact that it has appeared as a literary theme, designated in literature, introduced to, and recognized by readers. Mental illnesses are commonly mentioned in It's Okay. As simply as introducing someone's name. It bluntly talks about what must be hidden, overriding the common aversion towards 'mental diseases' in Korean society. As Butler said, injurious speech is another possibility for these characters. This is not just limited to gender; calling the names of those not acknowledged as subjects give them the chance to become social beings. The novel brings up previously unfamiliar people to us by boldly calling them out in front of us.

It's Okay, is appropriating the awareness of myself and other people by backgrounding a radio program by a DJ, Jaeyel. He is scornfully commenting on a movie <One Flew Over the Cuckoo's Nest>.

"The protagonist, Mc Murphy, visits the patients in a psychiatric ward for the first time. He believes he's different from the others in the ward. He looks down on them and mocks them. The viewers are of no exception. We think we are different from them. We view the patients as if they're crazy while we think highly of ourselves. ... However, as the movie continues to play and the plot unfolds, we get confused. It's strange and weird. The characters that were portrayed as crazy and psychotic, suddenly has the audience feeling sorry for them. ... Most people are uncomfortable accepting people who are not like them. So we assume that they are wrong simply because they are different. It's a scary thought." (It's Okay, That's Love 107-108)

Without thinking deeply about myself and the other, I just assume that I am right, and the other is wrong. There are no independent narratives of individuals in It's

Okay. The characters may hurt one another, but they are also healed by one another. The relationship between me and the other boils down to Sartre's engagement. "The other is indispensable to my existence, and equally so to any knowledge I can have of myself. Under these conditions, the intimate discovery of myself is at the same time the revelation of the other as a freedom ..."(Sartre, Existentialism 66) Sartre presents the case in which 'I care for myself' or the case in which 'I stand against myself', providing the conditions to face others. Caring for myself or standing against myself ultimately makes me move, meaning that I can face others when I make movements and not when I am still. In other words, I and the other are ultimately in 'inter-subjectivity'. Sartre's awareness of the other does not end with just thinking. The awareness must lead to 'moving' in order to reach actual empathy. I must maintain my acts of dialectic orientation to be interrelated with others. According to Sartre, not doing so is 'self-deception', which ethically leads to 'evil'. In Sartrean logic, ethics is an intervention with others, and knowing but not doing is cowardice.

The situation of self-deception in which thinking and doing are far from each other can be found in Kim Jiyoung. The psychiatrist who observes Kim Jiyoung recollects this, "if I were an average male in his forties, I would have gone through my entire life without this awareness" explaining that he understands and relates to Jiyoung's situation. But the self-deception is revealed in discussing the childcare leave for employees.

"Suyeon has undoubtedly been a great employee. She has pretty features, a neat and snappy way of dressing, and a quick wit and charm. She even remembers how I take my coffee ... Cheerful and warm, she has a smile on her face. ... the best female employees can cause the childcare problems. I'll have to make sure her replacement is unmarried." (Kim JiYoung 175)

He only thinks but does not act. Sartre explained that humans are related to others only when they act. In other words, the key to Sartre's practical philosophy is engagement, and stopping actions with just thoughts will only lead to self-deception.

Here is the dialog from It's Okay. A psychiatrist H looks to J for advise unsolvable patient case.

H: There is a woman. ... She only draws people's genitals. ... not only is it very detailed, but it's very disgusting as well.

J: So?

H: So? I'm saying that she only draws genitals.

J: So what?

H: Isn't that a bit weird?

J: What's weird about that? It's just a drawing. ...

H: ... You're right, there's nothing bad about that. Why should that be bad? It's not like she killed or injured anyone. Like you said, it's just drawings. Right? ... How would you explain that woman's psychological background? She's young and not in a relationship. All she has is her mom who is very kind and sweet. Her mother is very affectionate and caring towards her. She's not the type of person who would harm anyone.

J: You think a kind and sweet person would never hurt their child? ... (It's Okay, That's Love, 99-100)

The results of what is generalized and learned in our society can be seen in the following: the prejudice that painting something abnormal is a mental illness; the psychiatrist naturally thinking of conflict with her parents in psychoanalysis because the patient painted sexual organs; and the image that a kind, sweet person will never hurt others.

It is our stereotype and prejudice that differentiates between normal and abnormal. Moreover, the ethical error that "good 善 " will never hurt others is as latent in our minds as prejudice and social discipline. Thus, the act and turnaround of prejudice also led to Butler's performativity (Butler 1999). Identity as a thinking subject is contrasted with identity as an acting subject, creating a movement that sometimes makes us uncomfortable since we are already used to the existing conventionality. Discomfort is like a discipline created in an existing system that is not socially accepted.

The concept of male and female is actually quite ambiguous. Kim Jiyoung born in 1972, 1982, and 1992 struggle at different times. The fact that the female or male identity is consistently and universally given is a delusion that leads to errors. The awareness must change with the times. Prescribing and judging that A is one thing destroys movements and puts an end to performativity. The problem is that we try to identify who they are instead of paying attention to their actions. Identifying others and deciding what they are indicate that we have no intention to act. We make

<sup>1</sup> The question of whether or not the theory of performativity can be transposed onto matters of beyond gender has been explored by several scholars. (xvi) ... not only the appropriation of the colonial 'voice' by the colonized, but the split condition of identification is crucial to a notion of performativity that emphasizes the way minority identities are produced and riven at the same time under conditions of domination." Judith Butler, Gender Trouble, New York and London, Routledge, 1999[2002]. P.192.

puzzles out of the pieces we already had, make conclusions, and turn humans into trees that do not think nor act. This is why it is necessary to present the phenomena, and this is what literature can contribute.

In times of ignorance, literature is presented to us as a material for thinking and acting, not giving us an answer. However, as Jacques Derrida said, readers think in the blank spaces/scopes between letters. It's Okay showed us fragmentary concepts that we misunderstand. Kim Jiyoung presented the current situation, leaving it up to us to do the interpretations. As suggested by Jean-Paul Sartre, we constantly build relationships with others through literature. And before we fall into the depression claimed by Judith Butler, we must act.

#### 4. Conclusion

I examined the role of literature and how it is reflected in Kim Jiyoung and It's Okay. Literature does not provide alternatives to problems but rather creates discomfort and makes readers perceive, sense, and relate to the phenomenon. The undefined beings that are outside the boundaries of what is general in our society, such as heterosexuals, non-disabled, people without mental illnesses, and laborers that are not alienated; or the subordinate, the weak, and the nonmainstream of our society do not aim to take over the power. Rather, they just want acknowledgment of their existence and movement.

The standard of ethicality internalized in Korean society today is in a tug-ofwar between individuals and the community and between politics and reality. Texts like Kim Jiyoung and It's Okay also appeared in Korean society as part of this trend. This makes us think once again about the ethical role of literature hidden behind the phenomenon. Content that are more popular than literature can squeeze into the gap that cannot be entered by literature. The universalized form and standardized awareness resulting from overflowing social media and online spaces demand that we deliberate on the reality faced by content that convey literature and narratives as well as the future path. Literature must wisely deliver the story of not myself but the others. And it must also empower and support the stirring movements.

The question "who are you?" is a question asked before the movement. It presents consensus before the movement. For instance, it is a question that presents consensus such as "Are you a person with a disability?" By answering, "I am not a person with a disability", I define myself and differentiate myself from others. In other words, distinguishing and defining 'normal' and 'abnormal' is a convenient dichotomy that discriminates between superiority and inferiority. Not agreeing to that distinction and convincing others will create an uncomfortable situation that fails to reach an agreement. By then, the subject of performativity begins to move. Literature must be able to face the violence glorified by the comfort that 'it is just fine as it is'. Literature must be able to deliver examples of mentioning and supporting nonmainstream lifestyles. To sense this, we must closely read and think about the phenomenon. In the end, this is what the readers must do. Furthermore, we will obtain performativity by discussing the uncomfortable issues insignificantly in everyday life, thereby making it a part of our lifecycle.

Ethics inherent in literature was fundamental to find stability, serving as a measure to divide right or wrong and rational and irrational. However, stable satiety is a just component to follow or fill up certain conventionalities that are already made, and it is not enough to be a driving force to sense the ever-changing phenomena. Today, we are in desperate need of the role of literature that speaks and delivers language that turns phenomena into issues and not just hidebound desires that follow the path already built by the system. Literature must be able to present the ethics of our times. We can have the will to study and change when literature provides a new awareness with elaborate speech or content that can mention and cover all subjects without exception. We can sense a different aspect of a certain object when we discover something unfamiliar from what is familiar to us.

Nie Zhen Zhao expected to advance the theory and practice of literary criticism by establishing 'The International Association for Ethical Literary Criticism' society and exploring a new method of literary criticism that coincides with the changes and development of the times (Nie 167). It is expected to continuously create a space of heterotopia that can raise all kinds of voices for a new approach to literary criticism. Ethics in literature will exist either subtly or resolutely as a medium that helps people find their place. Then, how is it possible to be without literature?

#### **Works Cited**

Booth Wayne. "Symposium: Why Banning Ethical Criticism is a Serious Mistake." Philosophy and Literature 22. 2 (1998): 366-393.

Butler Judith. Excitable Speech: A Politics of the Performative. Routledge, 1997.

—. Gender Trouble: Feminism and the Subversion of Identity. New York and London, Routledge, 1999[2002].

陈后亮: "搭建文学批评与社会现实的桥梁:文学伦理学批评的价值选择与理论建构",《文学 跨学科研究》5.1 (2021): 38-45.

[Chen Houliang. "Bridging the Gap Between Literary Criticism and the Social Reality: The Value Choice and Theoretical Construction of Ethical Literary Criticism." Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 5.1 (2021): 38-45.]

Chen Lizhen, "Rejuvenation and Innovation: The Past, Present and Future of Ethical Literary Criticism." Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 3.3 (2019): 389-414.

Cho Nam-joo. Kim Jiyong, born 1982. Seoul, Minumsa Publishing, 2016.

Derrida Jacques. Of Grammatology. Baltimore and London, Johns Hopkins UP, 1976[1998].

Heo Yoon, "Feminism and the political in Feminist revolution." Modern Korean Literature 19 (2018): 123-152.

Kim Hyen. The Status of Korean Literature. Seoul, Moonji Publishing, 1977.

Nie Zhen Zhao, Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing, Peking University Press, 2014.

Noh Hee gyeong. It's Okay, That's Love. Seoul, Booklogcompany, 2016.

Oh Gil-young. "Several aspects of the Feminism Literature." Hwang Hae Review 98 (2018): 335-346.

Posner Richard. "Against Ethical Criticism." Philosophy and Literature 21. 1(1997): 1-27.

Ranciere Jacques. On the Shores of Politics. London, Verso Books, 1990[1995].

—. The Politics of Literature. Seoul, IGSR Publishing, 2004[2011].

Ross Charles. "A Conceptual Map of Ethical Literary Criticism: An Interview with Nie Zhenzhao." Forum for World Literature Studies 7.1 (2015): 7-14.

Sartre Jean-Paul. What Is Literature? New York, Philosophical Library, 1947[2005].

—. Existentialism is a Humanism. Seoul, Ehak Publishing, 1946[2008].

Woolf Virginia. A Room of One's Own. London, The Hogarth Press, 1929.

朝鲜现代"新女性"的伦理选择:比较罗蕙锡《琼嬉》和金东仁《金妍实传》中的两个新女性

The Ethical Choices of "New Women" in Korean:

A Comparative Study of Two New Women in *Kyeong-hee* by Na Hye-seok and *Biography of Kim Yeon-sil* by Kim Dong-in

金顺珍(Kim SoonJin)

内容摘要: 朝鲜现代时期的新女性既是"新"和"变化"的象征,同时也是"不良"和"破坏"的象征。现代朝鲜虽然欢迎在社会上出现的新女性,但同时也采取了警戒和遏制她们的双重态度。讲述朝鲜现代时期新女性的罗蕙锡的《琼嬉》和金东仁的《金妍实传》展示了截然相反的新女性形象。对新女性的赞美与这一时期出现的对现代的热烈憧憬和发展维系在一起。但是,现代朝鲜的新男性在欢迎步入社会的女性的同时,又不得不采取警戒和遏制她们的双重态度。男性知识分子出于不想与新女性分享享受新学问的权力和现代主体的地位,用父权式伦理,拒绝了新女性。而且朝鲜群众对新女性的批评是来自于有关"纯洁身体"的封建伦理和对女性消费主体的恐怖感。

关键词:新女性;启蒙伦理;两种伦理标准;琼嬉;金妍实传作者简介:金顺珍,鲜文大学中语中国学系,教授,主要从事韩中现当代文学比较、韩中女性文学比较、两岸文学比较,兼做中国现当代小说翻译。

**Title:** The Ethical Choices of "New Women" in Korean: A Comparative Study of Two New Women in *Kyeong-hee* by Na Hye-seok and *Biography of Kim Yeon-sil* by Kim Dong-in

**Abstract:** "New Women" in the modern period of Joseon symbolized newness and change, but, at the same time, badness and destruction as well. The modern period in Joseon took a double stance toward new women by welcoming them on the one hand, and by guarding against, and even controlling them, on the other. Two stories, *Kyeong-hee* by Na Hye-seok and *Biography of Kim Yeon-sil* by Kim Dong-in, both treat New Women in the modern period of Joseon, but the two women are very different, even opposite, from each other. The praises for new women demonstrated a passionate yearning for modernity emerging at the time. However, new men of the

modern period in Joseon revealed a double attitude of welcoming the new women and being cautious about their appearance. They even wanted to suppress the women. Male intellectuals of the modern Joseon, including Kim Dong-in, refused to accept new women based on the patriarchal ethics that made them hesitant about sharing with women the power to be attained through new learning. Critical stances of the people of Joseon toward new women were related to traditional ethical expectation of women's chastity and to the fear that women could learn to play a major role in consumption.

**Key words:** New Women; Enlightenment ethics double attitude; feudal ethics; Kyeong-hee; Biography of Kim Yeon-sil

Author: Kim Soon-Jin, Professor at Sun-Moon University (31460, Korea). Her major academin interests include comparison between Korean and Chinese Literature, a comparative study of cross strait literature. And interest in translation Modern Chinese Fiction (Email:kimsoonjin@hanmail.net).

"什么是文学?","文学的功能是什么?","文学应该怎么去阅读?" 等等问题,都是由来已久的问题,以至于很难断定其论争开始的起点。但是, 无论是什么答案,都离不开文学的本质是都与人、与人的生活有关的事实。 人文学是需要认真思考人生终极目的和实践的学问领域。因此,文学也无法 摆脱伦理问题。聂珍钊说过"阅读文学可以帮助人类获得道德启蒙,从而做 出更好的伦理选择"(Ross 8)。

徐荣彩在《文学的伦理》一书序言中曾这样提出:在脱理念的时代,文 学应该靠什么生存? 然后马上给出了应该靠伦理生存的答案(7)。怀疑、否定、 并推翻既定秩序,这才是文学的本性和伦理。如果说描绘我们应该创造的、 世界的光彩画面是理念的事情,那么伦理则是想要透彻凝视我们欲望深处努 力的产物。作为文学研究方法论的文学伦理学的含义,和体现文学价值及指 向的文学伦理的含义并不完全相同。但是,考察文学作品中人物矛盾和苦恼 的内因,考察作品中内在秩序的文学伦理学的研究方法,终究也不能与作家 的世界观以及接受该世界观的读者的审美价值取向完全分离。文学批评离不 开伦理生存条件。聂珍钊也说文学伦理学批评的任务就是"从伦理的视角解 释文本中描写的不同生活现象,在人与自我、人与他人、人与社会以及人与 自然的复杂伦理关系中,对处于特定历史环境中不同的伦理选择范例进行解 剖,分析伦理选择的不同动机,剖析伦理选择的过程,揭示不同选择给我们 带来的道德启示,发现可供效仿的道德榜,为人类文明的进步提供经验和教诲" (聂珍钊,《文学伦理学批评导论》5-6)。

甲午改革以后,朝鲜社会的主要任务是实现现代化。这主要体现在对传 统的否定和对通过日本引进的西方事物认为是新的、进步的思维。在这种对 新事物的追求中,新女性登场了。新女性既是"新"和"变化"的象征,同 时也是"不良"和"破坏"的象征。现代朝鲜虽然欢迎在社会上出现的新女性, 但同时也采取了警戒和遏制她们的双重态度。 其实具有伦理意识的人物将伦 理意识化为伦理行动,做出正确的伦理选择(尚必武26)。可是混乱社会使当 时的人们难以拥有正确的伦理意识,没有获得伦理意识的人们难以选择正确 的伦理行动。

## 一、两个新女性的伦理选择

讲述朝鲜现代时期新女性的罗蕙锡的《琼嬉》和金东仁的《金妍实传》 展示了截然相反的新女性形象。罗惠锡的《琼嬉》描写了逐渐成为启蒙主体 的女性。她们一边将原本属于女性领域的家务活儿改变成合理的、科学的, 一边又改变着周围的旧女性。相反、金东仁的《金妍实传》刻画了以新女性 的名义享受着自由恋爱,但最终却迎来悲惨结局的留日女学生。

琼嬉和妍实的欲望都是成为"新女性",但是在实践过程中,他们的伦 理选择却分化为"modern girl"和"new woman"。这里的"modern girl"是 指现代时期受外来影响,追求现代新生活的女性。相反, "new woman"是 指拒绝过去没能成为主体的女性,想要成为作为人具有新主体意志的女性。 如果说妍实的形象是"modern girl",那么琼嬉的形象就是"new woman"。 由于"新女性"具有这样的双重含义, 所以朝鲜现代的"新女性"既成了新 的象征, 也成了应该否定的象征。

留日后,暂时回国的琼嬉,因父亲提起婚事,内心经历了激烈的矛盾。 琼嬉可选择的道路有两条:一条是顺从父母的意志,追求经济上稳定、舒适 的道路;另一条是违背父母的意志,在经济上追求自力更生的艰苦道路。也 就是说,这是作为子女尽孝之路和成为主体"人"之路之间的选择。琼嬉最 终选择了后者,但是绝没有成为"离家出走的娜拉"。琼嬉的选择是在"现 在的这个位置"上,认识到做为"人"的尊严,体悟感恩之心,并自食其力。

"那么我的名称是什么?人啊!一定得是人啊。","即使是大麦饭, 我也认为自食其力的人才是人。如果把祖先挣来的饭、丈夫原封不动地 拿过来, 你又原封不动地吃那碗饭, 这与我们家的狗和一般人有什么两 样!""琼嬉也是人,然后才是女人。那么,是女人之前,首先是人。""那 好吧,没错,是人。如果不让人去寻找看不见的险路,那么让谁去寻找呢!" (罗薫錫120-21)

先成为人, 然后成为女性的自觉, 不想寄人篱下生活的意志, 同时把这种觉 悟和周围的旧女性分享的意愿, 琼嬉所选择的道路是"new woman"之路。

相反,金东仁的《金妍实传》中,妍实的伦理矛盾则更为复杂。从表面上看,

与琼嬉一样, 妍实也得在孝的实践和寻找自我的实践之间, 做出伦理上的选择。 不同的是, 琼嬉没有做出离开父亲家的行为, 但妍实拒绝了父亲的家, 选择 了前往日本的"娜拉"之路。在朝鲜父权社会中,女性去日本无异于离家出 走(Han Min-Zu 183)。

但妍实根本的伦理矛盾却源自对母亲和父亲扭曲的感情。因为妍实的母 亲是妾,曾做过妓女,所以觉得自己得不到爱,憎恨母亲,但对完全没有父 亲风范的父亲却并不感到憎恨。妍实对在年幼的女儿眼皮底下,与年轻的妓 女和毫无忌惮地做出性行为的父亲, 从不表露出厌恶之情。也就是说, 妍实 虽然知道对母亲的憎恶是不对的,知道对自己处境的所有不满都向母亲发泄 也是不当的,即使这一切罪恶的根源都在父亲身上,但她仍然渴望着父亲的爱。 对于妍实来说, 去日本留学并不是从不被认可的封建家庭中摆脱出来建立新 家庭或成为新人的自我意识中得以实现的。 在文学作品中,人物伦理意识一 旦出现混乱,没有受到伦理意识的正确指引,就很容易会采取不当的伦理行动, 做出不正确的伦理选择,甚至是伦理犯罪(尚必武27)。究其到底,妍实试图 想在日本寻找到另一个"父亲",同时希望自己成为"父亲"的化身。想寻 找能够替代父亲给予自己爱的男人,体验父亲式的放荡生活。妍实虽然有想 成为"女性先驱者"的意识,但这种意识只是个人的自我意识,缺乏国家或 民族意识,没有想要改变国家或民族未来的欲望。对于妍实来说,只有成为"新 女性"的欲望,而且妍实发现成为"新女性"的唯一途径就是自由恋爱。

"恋爱"一词于1912年首次出现在韩国文学中。"恋爱"是以男女两人 的感情交流为前提,对于习惯于封建婚姻制度的当时社会来说,"恋爱"一 词可以说是革命性的概念。但是,朝鲜现代时期新知识分子所向往的自由恋 爱和自由婚姻,对琼嬉来说并没有什么特别的意义。因为在父权制的现代朝 鲜社会,实现个人自我的最大障碍就是家庭。相反,对妍实来说没有这样的 意识,她更看重的是实现自由恋爱本身,实现自由恋爱就是成为新女性的象征, 因为她觉得"新女性"意味着权力。

但是妍实和琼嬉的身份认同既通过橱窗和他人的视线成为观察和监视的 对象来形成自我,展示新女性形象,同时又审视自己的内心,以反省者的面 貌来展示"新女性"形象。妍实的性麻木症透露出了感觉不到快乐而只拥有 自由恋爱形式的内心世界。但是另一方面,妍实的性麻木症可以防止她的性 被男性所束缚,也给男性带来了无法满足女性的挫折感和恐惧感。因此,妍 实的性麻木症既是作者对追求自由恋爱的新女性的嘲弄,同时也透露出了他 们因无法满足新女性欲望而感到的恐惧。

《金妍实传》将朝鲜现代时期新女性的面貌(虽然只是一部分),现实 而又真实地描绘了出来,这一点比罗惠锡的《琼嬉》更具有伦理性。因为在 朝鲜现代时期的新女性中, 像琼嬉那样具有强烈自我意识并成功实践的女性, 少之又少。甚至想要实践新女性生活的罗惠锡本人,最终也病死在街头。但是,

通过《金妍实传》不承认女性是独立的个人,不承认女性与男性是同等的启 蒙主体,这是符合男性知识分子的伦理需求的。从这一点来看,《金妍实传》 又是不够伦理的。说文学是非伦理的,不是因为某个社会的道德堕落相以文 学的面貌登场, 而是只限于通过文学来平息人的伦理意识时, 文学是非伦理 的(禹汉镕 115)。

### 二、两个作家的伦理选择

两种新女性的出现,源于两位作家看待新女性的相反的伦理意识。如果 说《琼嬉》的作者罗惠锡具有先该成为创造新秩序力量的"人"的伦理意识, 那么《金妍实传》的金东仁则具有想望维护男性权威的伦理意识。因此,罗 惠锡正面刻画了琼嬉的自由本能,金东仁却把妍实的原始欲望,描绘成破坏 当时伦理秩序的负面形象。文学生成的动因并非出于情感的表达,而更多的 则是出自自身的伦理选的诉求(吴笛,顾发良10)。这两部小说中两个女主 人公的不同伦理选择就决定了她们的命运,同时也显示了创造她们的两位作 家的不同伦理选择,还显示了朝鲜末动荡时期的社会伦理选择。

1918年发表的小说《琼嬉》是韩国第一部现代女性文学,作家罗惠锡是 韩国第一代新女性。她于 1896 年出生,辗转流浪于 1949 年病死街头。但罗 惠锡的人生被赋予了很多"朝鲜第一"的修饰语。比如:她是朝鲜第一位女 性西洋画家,婚后曾前往法国留过学,致力于改变女性地位的实践,1927年 6月从釜山出发,经过中国、俄罗斯,辗转欧洲各地和美国,是"环游世界的 朝鲜第一位女性"。另外,她还公开发表过关于自己离婚的《离婚告白书》, 描写对怀孕和生孩子感到恐惧的《当妈妈的感想记》,以及批判朝鲜男性双 重贞操论的《单身女性贞操论》等,给朝鲜社会带来了很大的冲击。罗惠锡 在恋人崔承九去世后,对向自己求爱的金雨英提出结婚时要给崔承九立墓碑 作为结婚条件之一的要求,可见对待感情方面她是一位非常坦诚的人。作家 自己为了摆脱贤妻良母和三从四德的旧思想,在《琼嬉》中,琼嬉选择了寻 找自我而不是家庭, 这是理所当然的事情。

相反,金东仁的伦理选择与罗惠锡有着很大的不同。朝鲜现代代表性自 然主义作家金东仁通过《金妍实传》中的新女性妍实赤裸裸地描写了新女性 的负面形象。从当时对新女性的新闻报道和杂志来看,实际上有很多批判新 女性的内容。例如,在1925年8月28日《东亚日报》的"猫狗都是新女性"中, 批评道: "恋爱了就是新女性,剪短发了就是新女性,离了婚就是新女性"。 1939年12月29日,在《东亚日报》的《瑶池镜"新学设以前"》中,李周 洪说地球上的狐狸数和新女性的数相同,讽刺了狐狸毛围巾流行的现象。这 与金东仁把金妍实描绘成把恋爱当做追随潮流、沉迷于消费的形象没有两样。 金东仁所描绘的金妍实是朝鲜现代知识分子对虚荣心高涨的新女性给出的一 棒,也可看作是作为日本殖民地知识分子有良心的伦理行为。

但不得不提到的是,《金妍实传》作品中的主人公是以金明淳为原型的。 生于 1896 年的金明淳与罗慧锡一样也是朝鲜的第一代新女性。1917 年《青 春》杂志的征文中,金明淳的短篇小说《怀疑的少女》入选,并她成为朝鲜 现代第一位女作家。以后她发表过小说23部、诗歌107首以外,还留下了随 笔、评论、戏曲、翻译作品等很多文学作品。也曾留学过日本,并连续在《朝 鲜日报》和《东亚日报》上连载过作品,具有超凡的能力。但是金明淳遭到 了很多新男性的无差别攻击。在日本留学期间遭遇过恋人的强奸曾试图自杀 的事件刊登报纸以后, 当时很多男性新知识分子认为金明淳的品行有问题, 进行了指责。但是金明淳未能从日本回到朝鲜,最终在精神病院结束了生命, 而造成此后果的决定性一击就是金东仁的《金妍实传》。金明淳的小名是金 弹实,有时也用于笔名,而主人公金妍实的名字很容易让人联想到金弹实。 另外, 生于平壤, 就读过进明学校, 母亲曾是妓女, 去东京留过学, 从事过 文学活动,是开化期的新女性以及因恋爱事件引起责难等诸多特征,由此当 时流传着《金妍实传》的主人公是以金明淳为原型的传闻。此后,金明淳永 远无法在朝鲜社会上露面,最后在日本的一家精神病院结束了自己的生命。

有时与其面对批判的内容,不如面对批判者的内在欲望更为适宜。当时 新女性的登场是时代发展的必然产物,但是有必要考察彻底否定和谩骂新女 性的男性新知识分子金东仁的内在欲望和他的伦理行为。金东仁将妍实规定 为假新女性的背后,潜藏着不想把新女性当做启蒙时期又一个权力的欲望。 金东仁作为文学家想要展现自己才华的欲望与只追求新女性地位的《金妍实 传》中的主人公无异。

在小说《脚丫子长得像》中,金东仁因为影射过作家廉想涉,曾引起过众议。 从这一点来看, 金东仁对其他优秀文学家的嫉妒心似乎相当强烈。这种文学 上的嫉妒心在指向其他男性作家时, 金东仁自己受到了攻击。但当指向新女 性作家时,反而得到了其他男性知识分子的支持。正如金东仁自己也曾说过 的那样: "金明淳是唯一有能力的女性作家" (Song Meong-Hee 199)。金 明淳是具有很强的创作能力的知性女性。但是正是因为这一点,她却招来了 其他朝鲜现代男性知识分子的仇视。

包括金东仁在内的朝鲜现代男性知识分子对新女性所实施的暴力和仇视 表明,新男性仍然没能摆脱父权式的伦理框架。在作品的开头,作者叙述妍 实的性脱轨行为是因为其母亲是妓女,丝毫没有摆脱只想在女性之间的血统 上寻找女性问题的父权式视角。相反,妍实的性脱轨行为是因为她父亲的不 轨行为, 但作品中哪儿都没有对其父亲进行过批判。同时, 对与妍实享受性 脱轨行为的多数男性也没有任何指责。反而,曾是妍实对象的男人却成了谴 责和指责妍实的主体。与旧女性结过婚,但是离婚后又与新女性自由结婚的 男性知识分子可以成为启蒙的主体,但是追求与男性新知识分子恋爱的新女 性却无法摆脱性方面的伦理批评。更何况,对于已婚的新女性来说,家庭这

个圈子仍然制约着她们,与旧女性的处境没有两样。男性知识分子无法容忍 婚后也仍希望成为"新女性"的女性,"新女性"只能是婚前的"新女性"。 对于金东仁来说,自由恋爱意味着放纵,但这只适用于女性,而不是男性。 新女性应该是男性启蒙的"新家庭"中的女性,绝不应该成为与男性同等地 位的启蒙主体。

### 三、现代读者的伦理选择

最后,我们想要考察接受罗惠锡的《琼嬉》、金东仁的《金妍实传》以 及新女性的朝鲜现代读者的伦理选择。朝鲜现代读者大致可以分为男性新知 识分子和现代普通大众。

1923年10月杂志《新女性》创刊后,在城市知识分子社会里"新女性" 成了大众用语、被尊崇和赞美为新时代唯一的先驱者和创作者。对新女性的 赞美与这一时期出现的对现代的热烈憧憬和发展维系在一起(金京一 45-47)。但是,新女性在保守的朝鲜现代社会的视线和评价中,并不只是赞美 和崇拜的对象的。像金东仁一样,新男性因为对现代国家的渴望,不得不容 忍新女性,但却陷入了不想与女性分享权力的双重矛盾中。他们不甘心女性 成为现代的主体。因此,现有体制势力试图把开始进入社会的女性送回家庭, 把新女性重新定义为"不良分子"(Han Min-Zu 429)。以"开辟社"为中 心的方定焕和车相瓒等男性知识分子为了启蒙女性,创刊了《新女性》杂志, 还做了《女性们,起来吧!》的巡回演讲。但同时也在《新女性》中嘲笑和 批评了罗惠锡和金明淳等的第一代新女性。结果,现代朝鲜的新男性在欢迎 步入社会的女性的同时,又不得不采取警戒和遏制她们的双重态度。男性知 识分子出于不想与新女性分享享受新学问的权力和现代主体的地位,用父权 式伦理, 拒绝了新女性。

但是朝鲜的现代大众不能接受新女性的动机与知识分子不同。因为朝鲜 的大众反正也不能成为启蒙的主体,大众对新女性的批判与对女性身体的封 建伦理联系在一起。那就是以"新女性的身体是不纯洁的"来指责。看穿大 众伦理意识的男性知识分子,将自己对新女性成为启蒙主体的恐惧感转化成 新女性"私生活紊乱、身体肮脏、无法控制肉欲"来批判。通过让新女性成 为大众的笑料,成为朝鲜大众偷窥症的对象,以此来压制新女性的力量。

对于日本殖民地时期的朝鲜大众来说,新女性因为受到"不良"新文化 的影响,具有破坏家庭秩序的不良因子,也是把纵欲合理化的虚伪人群(安 淑媛 333)。甚至这种认识还会引发了对女学生读书、生活行为的批评。在《新 女性》第2卷第5号中,朴达城对男女学生警告说,不要读小说或诗歌之类 的读物(朴达城 54-57)。《新女性》第3卷第5号中,以女性笔者的声音主 张自己做妾是因为"读了恋爱小说后堕落的" (惠兰 62-68)。当然,这篇文 章的作者是女性,但是与金东仁在《金妍实传》中将维特的悲伤、艾伦·凯(Ellen Key)的著作、黑田博士的著作等当作只重视肉体关系的恋爱书,批评主人公 金妍实是受这些书的影响, 只沉迷于肉体的恋爱的主张一脉相承。

另一方面,大众对新女性的指责和批评也是对女性消费权力的恐惧的表 现。当时对新女性的奢侈和物质消费的批判横行,这不仅是新女性特点的一面, 也是男性对新女性感到不安的反证。朝鲜的现代大众对新事物既有追求的欲 望,又对进步的事物持有否定的态度。这是一种恐惧心理。对于丧失国家的 朝鲜现代大众来说,最重要的伦理价值是家庭。但是新女性由于主张自由恋 爱,强调"女性",而不是"母性"。为了打扮自己成为消费主体的新女性, 被认为是挑战朝鲜现代大众家庭伦理秩序的罪魁祸首。在《新女性》第2卷5 号(通卷7号)刊登的心汕的漫画《新女子百态》中,还刊登了只寻找轻薄 的高级布料,只注重外貌的新女性的奢侈形象进行直言不讳批评的文章(心 油69)。

琼嬉和妍实都不是作为母性的女性。琼嬉拒绝结婚,而妍实的纵欲可看 作是妨碍了家庭的组成。在封建父权制家庭结构没有改变的情况下,不论是 新女性还是旧女性都要去承担作为母亲的责任,这一点不会发生什么改变。 但是,正如罗惠锡的《做妈妈的感想记》中所说的那样,新女性似乎与母性 不符。罗惠锡还主张"不忘记自己的幸福"(《新女性》第8期),强调当 女性失去主体性时,个人和家庭也都绝对不会幸福。正是由于这一点,更加 大了大众对新女性的排斥感,也体现了男性大众在家庭框架下无法控制女性 身体而感到的不安。金明淳因现代朝鲜男性知识分子的暴力笔法,最终在日 本漂泊,未能回国,在精神病院结束生命。而罗惠锡辗转流浪、病死街头。 这是由于没被现代朝鲜大众伦理选择的结果。

## 四、结论

聂珍钊主张善恶的概念是与伦理意识同时出现的。人性是人区别兽的本 质特征,正是人性因子的出现,人才会产生伦理意识,使人从兽变为人。伦 理意识的最重要特征就是分辨善恶的能力,人的基本属性恰恰是由能够分辨 善恶的伦理特性体现的(聂珍钊,《文学伦理学批评:伦理选择与斯芬克斯 因子》4-6)。这时善恶的辨别不是动物的欲望,而是指寻找作为人的价值的 道路。这里需要注意的是,人类历史的每个时期,人的价值观发生变化时, 伦理选择的标准也会随其时期和集体而发生变化。任何一个社会的伦理道德 观都不是固定不变的,人类社会就经历过从群居的"自然选择"阶段到后来 的"伦理选择"时代,即便是在"伦理选择"时期,伦理道德观也是在不断 发生变化的,在以往社会公认的伦理道德观,也许今天就是不再被认可的(张 杰、许诗焱36)。而且,在某一个时代的某个权力集团中,都会诞生出梦想 着新秩序的新牛集团。他们从对现有权力的抵抗和叛逆而出发。因此,新牛 集团的伦理与现有权力集团的伦理相违背是毋庸置疑的。

朝鲜的新女性是宣告新一代到来的标志,她自己应成为变革的主体,来 改变新女性自己和朝鲜社会。但是,当新女性想与男性同等地成为启蒙主体时, 她们被迎合大众伦理的男性知识分子的暴力所除掉。罗惠锡的《琼嬉》和金 东仁的《金妍实传》展现了针对"新女性"这样一个新生事物,新女性和男 性知识分子之间不同的伦理价值观,而与此相关的两位新女性-罗惠锡和金 明淳的人生和她们的死亡,体现了新女性和朝鲜现代时期大众的不同伦理价 值观。

对文学进行绝对的评价是不可能的。因为这不得不要添加评价时代的伦 理标准,所以对文学的评价也永远是相对的。伦理本身就是以一个共同体和 其正义通用的习惯和理念为前提的。但是当认为共同体的理念重要的时候不 会成问题,但是当共同体的伦理失去力量的时候,问题就开始出现了(徐荣 彩 44-45)。虽然父权制伦理成为整个社会的伦理时不会成问题,但是朝鲜现 代的开始与新伦理的诞生是同步的,新女性是新伦理诞生的标志。但是朝鲜 现代时期,民间和知识分子,男性和女性,旧女性和新女性等不同集团都具 有各自不同的道德伦理法则。

新女性通过自由恋爱表达对自由的追求,这是想要成为主体性人的欲望, 也是对父权制的反抗。如果对这种新女性的形象感到不满,那么这是承认自 己是父权制思维圈子内的人。很多朝鲜现代男性知识分子和大众的伦理选择 都未能摆脱父权制的框架。而且围绕自由恋爱,现代朝鲜的伦理标准针对男 性和女性是双重尺度的,这对现代朝鲜新女性来说无疑是悲剧。

#### **Work Cited**

安淑媛: "罗蕙锡小说《琼嬉》谈话论式研究",《女性文学研究》创刊号(1999): 331-356。

[Ahn Sook-won. "A Study on Discourse ad Performance in 'Kyung-Hee.' One of Rha, Hye-Suk's Short Stories." Feminism and Korean Literature (1999): 331-356.]

惠兰: "以早成为妾身的身体",《新女性》第3卷5号(1925):62-68。

[Hye ran. "As a body that was once a concubine." New Woman 3.5 (1925): 62-68.]

Han Min-zu. Bad Girls. Seoul: Humanist, 2017.

金东仁: "金妍实传", 《脚丫子长得像》。首尔: Saeum, 2020. 273-333.

[Kim Dong-in. "Biography of Kim Yeon-sil." Toes Resemble. Ed. Kim Hwatoung. Seoul: Saeum, 2020. 73-333]

金京一:《女性的现代,现代的女性》。首尔:蓝历史,2004年。

[Kim Kyung-II. Women's Modern, Modern Women. Seoul: Blue history, 2004.]

Kim Won-hee. "Searching for Self-Identity in Na Hye-seoks Gyeong-hee." Literary Criticism 71(2019):59-83.

罗蕙锡: "琼嬉", 《晶月罗蕙锡全集》。首尔: 国学资料院, 2001.95-122。

[Na Hye-seok. "Kyung-hee." the complete works of Na Hye-seok. Ed. Seo Jeong-ja. Seoul: Kookhak,

2001. 95-122.]

聂珍钊: "文学伦理学批评: 伦理选择与斯芬克斯因子", 《外国文学研究》6(2011): 1-13。

[Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Ethical Choice and Sphinx Factor." Foreign Literature Studies 6(2011): 1-13.]

---:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。

[—. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]

朴达城: "男女学生的恋病与文疾",《新女性》第2卷5号(1924):54-57。

[Park Dal-seong. "Love sickness and literary illness of male and female students." New Woman 2.5 (1925): 54-57.]

Ross Charles. "A Conceptual Map of Ethical Literary Criticism: An Interview with Nie Zhenzhao." Forum for World Literature Studies 1 (2015): 7-14.

尚必武: "文学伦理学批评:伦理选择、伦理意识与伦理行动",《文学跨学科研究》第5卷 1号(2021):22-30。

[Shang Biwu. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Ethical Choice, Ethical Consciousness, and Ethical Action." *Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature* 5.1(2021): 22-30.]

Song Ho young. "A Study on Kim Yeon-sil Practice through The Analysis of The Modern Women as a Main Subject." The Journal for Oversea Korean Literature 26(2020):165-200.

Song Meong-Hee. "Ambivalent sexism against new women in the 1920s." The Literary Movement 140 (2018): 182-201.

吴笛、顾发良: "从文学文本的三种形态看文学伦理学批评的理论基础",《文学跨学科研究》 第5卷1号(2021): 7-13。

[Wu Di Gu Faliang "Three Forms of Literary Texts and Theoretical Foundations of Ethical Literary Criticism." Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 5.1(2021):7-13.]

心汕: "新女子百态", 《新女性》第3卷5号(1925): 69。

[Sim San. "New Women's Variety." New Woman 3.5(1925): 69.]

徐荣彩:《文学的伦理》。首尔:文学村,2005年。

[Seo Young-chae. Literary Ethics. Seoul: Moonhakeun, 2005.]

禹汉镕: "文学研究的观点和有关伦理的问题",《现代文学理论研究》6(1996): 99-122。

[Woo Han-young. "Literary Research Perspective and Ethics Issues." THE JOURNAL OF MODERN LITERARY THEORY 6 (1996): 99-122.]

张杰、许诗焱: "文学伦理学批评的方法论价值阐释",《文学跨学科研究》第5卷1号(2021): 31-37

[Zhang Jie Xu Shiyan. "On the Methodological Value of Ethical Literary Criticism." Interdisciplinary *Studies of Literature* 5.1(2021):31-37.]

# 从小说《素食主义者》来看女性的身份认同转换和 伦理困境

# Women's Trans-identity and Ethical predicament in *The Vegetarian*

# 吴 娟 (Wu Juan)

内容摘要:不同的伦理环境孕育出不同的文学,但人类的普遍道德是一致的,很多伦理问题也是相通的。中韩两国自古以来在历史、文化、人文等方折有着很深的渊源,通过文学伦理学批评这一多棱镜来解读韩国文学,可紧索也是中韩共同存在的伦理问题,引发中韩读者的共同思考。小说《素女主义者》是韩国女性文学的代表作之一,2016年获得国际布克奖。小说姐太女主人公和父亲、丈夫、以及姐姐、姐夫人公的梦境作为伦理线,串联起女主人公和父亲、丈夫、以及姐姐、姐夫等一系列伦理结,讲述了女主公因备受压迫,从一个正常的家庭主妇。从明末后,对家庭主妇逐渐成是平庸之恶。这种恶不仅存在于政治领域,更存在于社会领域,甚至私人领域对事,往往会被家庭伦理身份所掩盖,不平庸之恶的反抗,对政策。但出现在私人领域时,往往会被家庭伦理身份所转换是一种自我防人。主就是对肉食的抗拒。成为素食主义者这一身份认同转换是一种自抗却失败了,还是维持现有伦理身份同时采取的一种反抗手段。但这种反抗却失败了,还带来一系列问题。书中所揭露的伦理困境是超越性别和国别的,需要大起思考,共同寻找出路。

关键词:文学伦理学批评;伦理困境;伦理选择;身份认同转换;平庸之恶作者简介:吴娟,文化创意产业学博士,韩国大真大学客座教授,韩国外国语大学讲师,亚洲文化创意产业研究所研究员。主要从事中韩文化分析,以及电影和文学比较研究。

Title: Women's Ethical predicament and Trans-identity in The Vegetarian

**Abstract:** Various ethical environments give birth to a variety of literatures, but the morality of humankind in general is the same, as they have many ethical issues in common. China and South Korea have deep-rooted connection in history, culture, humanities and so on, and share some common ethical problems. *The Vegetarian* is one of the masterpieces of Korean Women's literature and it won the International Booker Prize in 2016. The novel uses the heroine's dream as the ethical line which

is a series of interconnected ethical knots. It tells the tragic story of the heroine being oppressed; from a normal housewife she gradually becomes a mentally ill person. The novel reveals the most easily overlooked kind of animal factor, that is the Banality of evil. This evil exists not only in the political sphere, but also in the social sphere and even in the private sphere. But when it comes to the private sphere, it is often obscured by ethical identity and is not easy to identify. Becoming a vegetarian is a self-defense mechanism and a means to resistance in order to maintain the existing ethical identity. But this resistance fails. The ethical predicament revealed by The Vegetarian goes beyond gender and country, requiring everyone to think together and find a way out of this kind of environment.

**Key words:** ethical literary criticism; ethical predicament; ethical selection; transidentity; the banality of evil

Authors: Wu Juan, Ph.D. of Culture & Contents, Visiting Professor at Daejin University(South Korea), Instructor at Hankuk University of Foreign Studies, a researcher from Asia Cultural Creativity Institute, specializing in comparative study in Chinese and Korean culture, including literature and films (Email: wujuan0421@ naver.com).

近年来,韩国影视作品在全世界大放异彩,取得非常显著的成就。电影 和文学是紧密相连的,正是有很多好的文学故事做基础,影视作品才有了源 源不断的灵感和养分,因此韩国文学作品也受到越来越多的关注和重视。与 此同时,韩国女性作家的影响力也在日益突出,她们的文字引发了强烈的社 会反响和共鸣。著名小说家申京淑的长篇小说《拜托妈妈》创下了韩国文学 出版史上"最短时间突破百万册"的新纪录,作家孔枝泳的《熔炉》是一部 影响和改变国家法律的文学作品,在同名电影上映后引发近600万次观影狂潮, 成为韩国《熔炉法》的助推者。2018年韩国女作家赵南柱长篇小说《82年生 的金智英》让更多人了解了韩国女性在家庭、社会、职场中遭遇的一系列不 平等。这些女性文学作品不仅仅只是一部作品,更是历史和社会环境的共同 产物,代表着一种伦理重构的诉求。

本文的研究对象《素食主义者》是作家韩江的作品,也是韩国女性文学 的代表作之一,2016年获得国际布克奖。系列小说《素食主义者》由《素食 主义者》、《胎记》《树火》三个部分构成。分别从女主人公英惠的丈夫、 姐夫、姐姐三个角度讲述了她因备受压迫,从一个正常的家庭主妇逐渐成为 精神病人的悲剧故事。从先行研究中可以看到中韩学者分别从叙述者声音、 植物意向隐喻、人物形象塑造、女性主义等多个方面对小说进行了分析和讨论。 本文将借助文学伦理学批评的方法对这部作品进行重新解读,通过剖析小说 中出现的各种伦理选择范例,来分析女主人公在身份认同转换过程中遇到的 自我身份和伦理身份的冲突, 并探究其面临的伦理困境, 以及造成这些伦理 困境的原因。

不同的伦理环境孕育出不同的文学, 但人类的普遍道德是一致, 很多伦 理问题也是相通的。"在亚洲,尤其是东亚各国,在社会和思想方面有很多 共通点"(聂珍钊,"文学伦理学批评在中国"39),因此,文学伦理学批评 对于东亚各国文学批评有着重要的意义。在文学伦理学批评理论中,"文学 因人对道德伦理的需要而发生,又以伦理教诲的作用而发展。在此过程中, 人因选择伦理而成为真正的人,社会因选择伦理而演绎为共同体的文明"(陈 红薇 16)。中韩两国自古以来在历史、文化、人文等方面有着很深的渊源, 通过文学伦理学批评这一多棱镜来解读韩国文学,可以折射出一些中韩共同 存在的伦理问题,引发中韩读者的共同思考,推进当代中韩文学与文化交流 的蓬勃发展。

### 一、伦理选择和身份认同转换

文学伦理学批评从起源上把文学看成道德的产物,从伦理视角认识文学 的伦理本质和教诲功能。无论是文学作品中还是现实生活里,人总是会面对 无数的选择和挑战。人出生后所经历的认知和理性成熟的过程,就是人所经 历的伦理选择过程,在这个过程中,人并不是单一存在的,而是处在人与自 我,人与他人,人与社会以及人与自然的复杂伦理关系中。人是社会的动物、 集体的存在。只有在集体的状态中,人的存在才是一个完整的社会意义上的 人的存在。在社会的状态中,人的存在不只是受自己的感觉、本能的影响, 还受到大家在一起的、一群人的、类似集体本能东西的影响。社会并不是个 人相加的简单总和,而是由个人的结合而形成的体系,而这个体系则是一种 具有自身属性的独特的实在"(埃米尔•涂尔干119)。

在文学伦理学中, "斯芬克斯因子"是一个重要的关键词, "斯芬克斯 因子"由两部分组成:人性因子与兽性因子。这两种因子有机地组合在一起, 构成一个完整的人。并通过理性意志和自由意志发挥作用。"两种意志之间 的力量消长,导致文学作品中人物性格的变化和故事情节的发展"(聂珍钊,《文 学伦理学批评导论》49)。我们跟社会的关系,正是我们和他者的关系,因此, 我们跟他者发生相互作用时,就包括跟他者人性因子和兽性因子的相互作用。 每个人都是善恶并存的生物体,从这个角度看,"文学作品的价值就在于通 过描绘人性因子同兽性因子的不同组合与变化揭示人的伦理选择过程"(聂 珍钊, "文学伦理学批评的价值选择与理论建构"74)。本文将这种自我和 他者的相互作用分为以下四种类型。

这种相互作用的场所可以分为私人领域,社会领域和政治领域。不同的 领域有着不同的身份, 在和他者发生相互作用时, 不管是主动还是被动, 总 会伴随旧身份的消失和新身份的诞生,以及因此产生的一系列问题。例如新

	А	В	С	D
自我	人性因子	人性因子	兽性因子	兽性因子
他者	人性因子	兽性因子	人性因子	兽性因子
相互作用	真善美 鸟托邦	人性因子上升: 惩恶扬善 人性因子下降: 丧失理性		打破禁忌

[表 1] 自我和他者间斯芬克斯因子的相互作用

的身份和已有的伦理身份是否相符,我们是否认同自己的新身份,新的身份 又是否受到他人的认同。

在文学作品中,身份认同转换(trans-identity)形象是构建特定叙事的重 要因素之一。"人类所创造和享有的众多叙事体中都存在'trans-identity'角色, 即,都存在身份转换的人物形象,故事的构成和展开正是以这种人物形象为 前提。从人类不朽的经典名著到同时代的大众叙事,身份认同转换的人物形 象无所不在"(Lim Daegeun, "Concept and Types of Trans-Identity" 132)。 正如人的一生总会面临无数的选择,各个阶段也会有不同的身份认同转换的 欲望。做人还是做兽?要成为一个怎样的人?身份转换认同和伦理问题是密 切相关的,从本质上说,伦理选择是在特定环境或语境中对如何做人的选 择,也是对人的身份的建构和确认。"在各种身份中,伦理身份是评价道德 行为的前提。伦理选择活动往往是由人的身份决定的,不同身份的人会作出 不同的选择,不同的选择也建构新的身份"(聂珍钊,"文学伦理学批评的 价值选择与理论建构"77)。当我们做出一个选择时,就像走上了"身份认 同转换桥梁 (Lim Daegeun, "Some Representations of Transidentity Characters" 288)",告别旧的身份,走向新的身份,此过程是否顺坦,能否成功抵达彼 岸都是未知。

"在现实中,伦理要求身份同道德行为相符合,即身份与行为在道德规 范上相一致"(聂珍钊,《文学伦理学批评导论》264)。从文学和电影作品 来看,当一个角色的出发身份是伦理身份,到达身份是非伦理身份时就会有 冲突,例如电影《神女》中阮玲玉饰演的角色就是在母亲这个伦理身份和妓 女这个非伦理身份中挣扎,为了生活和抚养儿子不得不出卖肉体,但周遭的 流言蜚语使孩子遭到歧视而失学,让她觉得自己配不上母亲这个身份,愧对 儿子。这种在身份转换认同桥梁上的徘徊和冲突揭露了当时的社会背景,以 及女性面对重重压迫时的无助和绝望。《素食主义者》中女主人公作出了两 个选择,第一个选择是要成为素食主义者,在小说结尾则选择要成为一棵树。 接下来将具体分析这一系列选择的动机和结果,以及在此过程中女主人公所 面临怎样的伦理困境。

#### 二、作为关系维持的伦理选择:成为素食主义者

小说《素食主义者》中自我和他者相互作用的场所主要是私人领域,即

家庭成员间的关系。家庭非常重要,因为我们每一个人都受到我们在家庭复 合体(family-complex)中的角色的塑造。女主人公英惠有着多重伦理身份, 是女儿,是妻子,是妹妹的同时也是姐姐,还是小姨子。在这些伦理身份中, 和男性相关的身份占了大多数,除了妈妈和姐姐,其他都是男性。英惠一觉 醒来决定要成为一个素食主义者,因为她做了一个奇怪的梦。梦是无意识的 象征性语言,弗洛伊德认为,无意识主要由本能构成。就某种意义而言,无 意识"产出"于我们如何看待自己在家庭中的地位,以及如何对这种自我界 定作出反应。无意识当中储存着一些令人痛苦的体验和情感,我们之所以不 愿意了解这些创伤、恐惧、邪念和悬而未决的冲突,原因就在于,我们担心 自己被它们击垮。无意识在我们很小的时候就形成了。它是通过压抑,即可 以遗忘不愉快的心理事件而形成的。 梦境体现了英惠的本能, 她梦到了什么? 她又为什么做这个梦呢?

首先,英惠梦到了"火红色的肉块"和"血淋淋的眼睛",梦境引出了 小说的第一个伦理结,就是和父亲的关系。在成长的过程中,父母的影响是 最大的,小说中重点描写了父亲的影响,因为母亲并没有多少话语权。首先, 父亲是一个非常暴力的人,母亲、姐姐、弟弟都默默忍受着这种暴力,英惠 因为是家里的老二,又是女孩,挨打的次数是最多的。英惠最想忘记却又难 以泯灭的一个记忆就是小时候被狗咬了时父亲的处理方式。"咬我腿的那只 狗,被爸爸绑在摩托车后。狗尾巴上的毛被拔下来,用火烧后贴在我的伤口处, 用绷带紧紧地缠了几圈。(……)爸爸说,原本要把它吊在大树上,边用火熏, 边用木棒揍它。他又说,不知从哪里听过,跑死的狗肉质更鲜嫩柔软。爸爸 开动摩托车,开始绕村子行驶,那只狗也跟摩托车一起跑。两圈,三圈,爸 爸重复着同意的路线。( ......) 当我等待这它第七次经过我面前时,我却远 远地看见了爸爸用摩托车载它回来。我看到了它那摇晃着的四肢和微微睁开 的满含血泪的眼睛"(49)1。 当天晚上,家里大摆筵席,英惠也被逼着吃了 狗肉汤拌饭。因为大家都说"要治疗狗咬伤,必须得吃它的肉",英惠甚至 觉得, 狗的眼睛似乎在汤饭上面闪烁着。这双眼睛, 在成年英惠的梦中出现了, 之前的压抑并没有根除她的痛苦体验和情感,反而在梦中,这种无意识行为 让她得以"宣泄"出一直压抑着自己的痛苦经历和感受。

被狗咬就要把狗吃了的残忍行为是村里公认的真理,而父亲显然用更残 忍的方法来践行了这种真理。大家热衷于去实行,却没有人去思考对与错。 这让人想到了"平庸之恶"这个概念,汉娜。阿伦特主要分析了政治层面的 平庸之恶, 因此和战争等宏大叙事相关, 但私人领域同样存在平庸之恶。父 亲身上的这种平庸之恶,从英惠丈夫的描述中能知道更多细节,"岳父是个 极其大男子主义的人,深具一家之主的威严。他从来不会说关怀之类的话语。

<sup>1</sup> 本文相关引文均出自韩江:《素食主义者》(重庆:重庆出版社,2013年)。下文只标注页码, 不再一一说明。

以参加战争并得到荣誉勋章为最大荣誉的他,平时说话嗓门很高,而且十分 威武有气魄。我曾经一下子干掉了七个兵(……)这样开头的故事,作为女 婿的我也听他说过两三次。听说老婆的小腿被这样的岳父一直打到十八岁" (35)。透过这些描述,一个"严父"形象跃然纸上,他残忍,暴力,武断, 非常大男子主义。父亲在一种强者的语境中通过谈论越南战争来表达自己是 一个强者,即我们称之为'硬汉子'的伦理理念。他认为自己就代表着权威, 不允许任何人的忤逆。但是他在行动时,是没有经过思考的,他从未思考过 越南战争的意义,也没思考过被狗咬伤应该怎么治疗,更没思考过他对家人 的暴力是否正确。

其次,做梦的原因引出了小说的第二个伦理结,就是和丈夫的关系。英 惠和丈夫的关系不是平等的关系,丈夫的言行里同样存在着平庸之恶。我们 关于是非的决定将依赖于我们对同伴的选择,即那些我们愿意与其共度一生 的人的选择。但丈夫选择结婚对象的原因是并不是因为爱,而是因为自卑的 他既要传宗接代,又不想费劲投入感情,所以找了看起来最为平凡的英惠。 他是自私而冷漠的,"从道德上,甚至从政治上说,这种冷漠,尽管相当平常, 却是最危险的〔……〕在那里存在着恐怖,同时,也存在着恶的平庸性"〔汉 娜·阿伦特 152)。他甚至觉得英惠身材不够好,让他在朋友面前没有脸面。 做梦的前一晚,因为英惠切肉慢了一点,丈夫就带着怒气催促。吃饭时候在 肉里吃出异物,立马暴跳如雷,眉头紧皱,大发雷霆。当天晚上,英惠的梦 中开始出现草棚里的血块。在这之后,英惠决定开始吃素。丈夫发现妻子的 异常举动后并没有一丝一毫的关心,从未询问吃素的原因,只是责怪和讽刺, "你疯了吗?",并且把妻子当作"做饭、打扫房间的姐姐或钟点工"。而 他唯一难以忍受的,则是妻子拒绝与他亲热,说他身上有"肉味",而且是"从 每一个毛孔中出来"。这里的肉味其实是对兽性因子的隐喻,他对妻子没有 丝毫的尊重,在遭到拒绝后,竟然借着醉意强行和妻子发生关系,并把妻子 比作"强行拉来的从军慰安妇"。

很多时候,大家都习惯了父亲和丈夫的种种行为,或是仅从道德上去指 责批评,但文学伦理学批评让我们可以"站在当时的伦理立场上解读和阐释 文学作品,寻找文学产生的客观伦理原因并解释其何以成立,分析作品中导 致社会事件和影响人物命运的伦理因素,用伦理的观点对事件、人物、文学 问题等进行解释,并从历史的角度作出道德评价"(Charles Ross 10)。从上 述分析可以看出,父亲和丈夫身上都存在着平庸之恶,这种平庸之恶又和父 权制的影响有关系。但很多时候,这种兽性因子中的平庸之恶却因为伦理身 份被掩盖了。

英惠通过梦境觉醒了,她把周围的平庸之恶移置(displacement)到了肉上, 对平庸之恶的反抗就是对肉食的抗拒。这种身份认同转换是一种自我防御机 制,也是为了维持现有伦理身份而采取的一种温和的反抗手段,但这种反抗

却遭到了父亲的暴力制止。在一次家庭聚会中,父亲为了强迫英惠吃肉,不 惜当着所有家人扇了英惠两个耳光,还强行把肉塞到了她嘴里。弟弟和丈夫 不但不阻止,还在旁边帮腔。这种强制行为给英惠造成了真实界的创伤(trauma of Real)。之前隐藏的真相浮出了无意识层面,出现在自我意识层面,既无 法掩饰也无法应对,陷入心理危机的英惠一口吐掉肉,发出"动物般的悲鸣", 拿起了放在餐桌上的水果刀割向自己的手腕。虽然最终被救了过来,但此时 英惠已饱受创伤, 理智还未恢复, 人性因子也被压抑, 因此她会像野兽一般 咬死一只鸟,或是在光天化日下坦胸露乳。

"真正疼的是胸,像是有什么东西挂在心口。〔……〕是因为肉,我吃 了太多的肉,那些生命安静地滞留在哪里。没错!血液和肉块都被消化,散 在身体的每个角落,残渣也已经排到了体外,可是那些生命却纠缠不休,牢 牢地贴在那里"(59)。肉代表了父亲和丈夫身上的兽性因子,也是平庸之 恶的象征。英惠想反抗这些压迫,就需要实现身份认同转换,成为一个独立 的个体。但她不愿伤害父亲和丈夫, 想要维持女儿和妻子这两个伦理身份, 所以没有直接发表针对父亲和丈夫的拒绝宣言(declaration of denial),只是 说"我不吃肉"。选择成为素食主义者,就是对周围兽性因子最低程度的反抗, 这个选择并未脱离自己的伦理身份,但却遭到家人的联合反对和父亲的暴力 阻止,身心都受到创伤的她最终失去了女儿和妻子这两个伦理身份,父亲不 再把她当作女儿, 丈夫也抛弃了她, 她为了维持关系做出的选择还是导致了 关系的破裂。

## 三、作为结果的伦理困境:成为植物

小说的第二章《胎记》和第三章《树火》分别以姐夫和姐姐的口吻来展 开事件。失去女儿和妻子这两个伦理身份, 理性意志受到重创的英惠, 在姐 姐的照顾下,虽然在精神方面还未完全恢复,但也能正常生活。这时候,她 身边唯一的异性就是姐夫,从表面上看,姐夫是对英惠最为平等的一位男性, 当英惠割腕自杀时也是他第一个冲出来把英惠送到医院。但就是这样一位男 性,成为了压倒骆驼的最后一根稻草,让英惠陷入了乱伦的困境。

姐夫选择和姐姐结婚也不是因为爱情,仅仅是因为姐姐的长相、身材、 性格符合择偶条件而已。英惠丈夫身上存在的对伴侣的冷漠在他身上同样存 在,他的内心更喜欢的是自己的小姨子,也就是英惠,因为从她身上感觉到 了"类似不曾修建枝丫的野生树木般的原始力量"。听到妻子说英惠二十岁 的时候还有胎斑的瞬间,他对英惠产生了异样的想法,这种非理性意志左右 着他。"小姨子的臀部尚留有胎斑的事实和身上彩绘着花朵的全裸男女交合 的场景不可思议地构成一个清晰而准确的连接,镌刻在他的脑海里"(72)。 在此过程中,他也不断质问自己是否是正常人,是否有足够的道德感和强大 的自我控制力。自然意志和理性意志冲突的过程让他焦躁不安,痛苦又自我 怀疑,以及连同失去家庭的恐惧感。然而他并没有抑制这个欲望,而是觉得 从这个地狱解脱的方法只有一个,就是实现这个欲望。于是他邀请英惠做自 己的模特,在身上进行彩绘。理性意志还未恢复的英惠只能遵从自己的自然 意志,对兽性的拒绝让她对植物的渴望更加强烈。因此她觉得在自己身上画 上花朵是一件美好的事,并对身上同样画满花朵的异性感到难以抗拒的吸引 力。姐夫诱惑着英惠完成梦想中的拍摄,并跨越了雷池。

姐夫和英惠不一样,他有着完整的理性意志,但是在做伦理选择(ethical choice) 时却被感情战胜了, 忠诚、责任等道德规范对他已经不再起作用。他 的"伦理意识与伦理行动出现了断裂,即便具有区分善恶的伦理意识,但并 未采取相应的伦理行动,未能做出正确的伦理选择"(尚必武,"文学伦理 学批评"26)。他站在不要任何道德束缚的非理性主义的立场上,以追求艺 术的名义走进了禁区。"社会的伦理规则是伦理秩序的保障,一个人只要生 活在这个社会里,就必然要受到伦理规则的制约,否则就会受到惩罚"(聂 珍钊,《文学伦理学批评:基本理论与术语》19)。这里姐夫的本能和原始 欲望怎样影响人的生活和命运也得到了细致的描写。他忘记了自己作为丈夫、 父亲和姐夫的伦理身份, 听任在原始本能推动下产生的强烈原始欲望的支配, 背叛了妻子,和小姨子打破禁忌。平时暗藏在身体里的平庸之恶不再受到伦 理身份的控制,放弃自己的伦理身份,就意味着他放弃了自己的伦理责任和 义务,也意味着对社会认同的伦理秩序的破坏,因此必然会遭受惩罚,因此 也失去了妻子和儿子。

英惠最后的选择是要成为一棵树、代表了对兽性因子的彻底拒绝。但人 性因子和兽性因子是共存的,因此这种选择也是对人性因子的拒绝。她不仅 拒绝吃肉,也拒绝吃一切食物。之前在和他者的相互作用中,不仅没能战胜 兽性因子, 还受到了心理创伤。心理防线被击垮后的英惠开始把越来越多的 时间花在想象界当中,直到她彻底生活在其中而不能自拔。对想象界的依赖 导致她排斥象征界,象征界体现在男性的压迫上,一方面她发现象征界过于 束缚,另一方面又发现真实界过于残暴,这种情况下,只有一条出路,就是 逐渐适应想象界,但最后却沉浸其中,让自己陷入了"双重困境"(马晓俐、 郝祥建 507)。所以在小说结尾,她像棵树一样倒立,无法发挥社会成员应有 的作用。"我是一棵树"这种想法其实是没有意识到自己的自我永续性(selfpermanence)。自我永续性的不自知指的是意识不到昨天的自己和今天的自 己是同一个人,也意识不到身体的某个部位或精神都是构成自己的一部分这 一事实。这表明了自我处于"非共时性的共时性"和"非同一性的同一性"(Lim Daegeun, "Some Representations of Transidentity Characters" 286) 的状况下。这 表明了象征界身份认同转换的失败,重新回到想象界的状态让象征界的生活 陷入一系列混乱之中。

英惠每天长时间倒立,因血液倒流而满脸通红。她对姐姐说,"我以前

不知道,一直以为树木们是直直地站立着的,可是现在明白了,它们都是用 胳膊撑地倒立着的, 你看, 很惊人吧? 〔……〕你知道我是怎么知道的吗? 在梦里,我正倒立着(……)突然发现从我身上冒出了树枝,从手上长出了 树根(……)从腿间要开出花朵,所以我就使劲张开两条腿……我应该被浇水。 姐姐,这些食物我不需要,我需要水"(179)。这里"水"也是一个重要象征, 英惠想要用水来洗去身上的被压迫感和兽性因子。医生说英惠患者是精神分 裂和厌食症同时存在的特殊病例,但英惠却说没有人能理解她,大夫、护士 也都一样,根本不想理解她,只给她打针吃药。长期饥饿引起了荷尔蒙失调, 英惠的脸与胳膊上的汗毛,像是婴儿身上的胎毛。她在很早之前已经停经了, 体重也不到30公斤,以失去所有二次性征的怪异模样,静静地躺在病床上。 面对自己的内脏退化,她却很高兴,认为自己快变成植物了,不再需要吃饭, 只要有阳光就能活下去,而且语言能力和思维能力都会消失。

英惠周围的女性, 其实也面临着相同的困境, 母亲被父亲压制了一辈子, 对她的困境爱莫能助。姐姐虽然从小保护她,但却也难以从根本上解决问题。 其实姐姐也是那个需要被帮助的人。英惠对姐姐说,"世上的树木都像是兄 弟姐妹",但姐姐却觉得没有一棵树愿意收留自己。尽管看起来家庭幸福圆 满,其实不过是用自己的顺从掩盖了一切。从记事起开始,她只是一直默默 地在忍受。结婚前,是对父亲的忍受,结婚后,是对丈夫的忍受。她拒绝思 考,或者说逃避思考。她确信自己是一个善良的人,而且正如她所确信的那 样,她确实没有给别人带来任何伤害。诚实,能干,尽力去满足周围人的需 求。顺从且不伤害别人,是否就代表了善良呢? 姐姐后来终于明白,自己作 为长女表现出来的懂事并不是早熟, 而是一种怯懦, 是在父亲的暴力下一种 自我保护的生存方式而已。同样,作为妻子表现出来的体贴,作为姐姐表现 出来的关爱,是否仅仅是一种生存方式或是一种习惯呢?这样一个善良的人, 最终却遭到丈夫的背叛,父母也因为不想面对这一切,不再和她联系。她和 妹妹一样,失去了女儿和妻子这两个伦理身份。面对他者的兽性因子,面对 平庸之恶,是试图反抗的妹妹走出了困境还是一直顺从的姐姐走出了困境呢? 这或许是没有答案的,小说的结局并不是一个答案,如何走出伦理困境,依 然在探索的过程中。

#### 四、反思—如何反抗平庸之恶

韩国著名的象征派诗人及小说家李箱曾说过,"我认为只有人,才是(真 正的)植物",韩江也是深受这句话的启发获得灵感,从而创作出许多关于 植物的女性形象,反映出现代社会中女性受到不平等待遇的状况,表达出期 望女性进行自我救赎的伦理关怀。"文学伦理学批评不仅是文学研究中的一 种方法,也是启发在道德价值和伦理价值背景下那些想要探讨人性衰落的作 家们的一种模式"(Chen Lizhen 393)。《素食主义者》用女主人公的梦境 作为伦理线,串联起英惠和父亲、丈夫,以及姐姐和姐夫等一系列伦理结。 小说中揭露的矛盾并不是单纯的男女间的对立,而是将多对矛盾冲突放到亲 情、爱情等情感关系下进行展开。也没有从女性角度批判任何男性,甚至很 少使用女主人公的视角, 而是通过周遭男性的讲述, 再现女性的困境。小说 揭示了兽性因子中最容易被忽略的一种, 也就是平庸之恶。这种恶最令人震 惊的一面是它的扩散无须根植于任何意识形态。当恶行没有令人心生懊悔, 当恶行犯下之后旋即被忘却, 就说明这种恶是不受限制的。而且这种恶不仅 仅存在于政治领域, 而是在社会领域, 甚至私人领域都可存在。往往因为它 被各种伦理身份所掩盖,所以不容易被识别。但是当伦理身份和自我身份发 生冲突时,平庸之恶则可能不再受到伦理身份的控制,招致更大的恶行,造 成不可挽回的后果。

"人类伦理选择的实质就是做人还是做兽,而做人还是做兽的前提是人 类需要通过理性认识自己,即认识究竟是什么将人同兽区别开来的"(聂珍钊, 《文学伦理学批评导论》 36)。首先,人需要有区分善恶的能力,就是要有 判断力。有了判断力才能分辨出这种平庸之恶,个体虽然很难抵制但可以预 防恶行。"拒绝恶甚至不被恶引诱的倾向才要求每一个人,而不仅仅是要求 哲学家或其他知识分子,注意那种因缺乏更好的名称而被我们称为道德的东 西"(汉娜·阿伦特22)。 其次,需要有选择的自由, 意志是理性和欲望之 间的仲裁者,就此来说,只有意志是自由的。虽然理性展示了适用于所有人 的东西,欲望展示了适用于所有生物的东西,但只有意志是完全属于自己的。 小说中女主人公的意志却没有自由,她试图反抗过这种平庸之恶,选择成为 素食主义者就是一种反抗的象征,但就连这种最低程度的反抗都失败了,可 见女主人公是没有选择权的,她只能接受和顺从,否则就会被迫失去自己的 伦理身份。但一直顺从的姐姐却也殊途同归,姐妹俩陷入了同样走不出的伦 理困境。

人性中总避免不了兽性,我们要做的是用人性因子战胜兽性因子。女主 人公的选择是彻底告别兽性,放弃人性,放弃思考,也就是放弃生命。她最 后要成为一棵树,这是一个无法实现的选择,是小说的一个结局,更是留给 读者的一个思考。文学带给我们的教诲, 也包括让所有读者一起思考, 到底 是谁造成的这种困境,怎样才能走出这个困境,怎样才能反抗平庸之恶。伦 理并不是个人的选择,更是一种和他人以及社会的相互作用。人必须对自己 施加压力, "存天理去人欲", "克己复礼", 才能使自己向上提升, 而不 是向下沉沦, 在这种情形下, 一个人如何提升自己的精神而压抑自己的肉体 呢? 光靠自己的力量是不行的, 必须要依赖社会。

对于个人来说, 道德来自于社会, 社会超越每个人, 个人面对社会必须 牺牲某种固有的本性,而且因为社会是神圣的、好的、善的,它构成了一种 道德的权威性,透过明显的命令,对个人产生义务性的要求。换句话说,社

会会透过社会团结产生一种社会权威,最后转变成一种共同的道德规范。社 会构成的道德规范之所以有权威性,是因为社会的道德是神圣的,是可以制 约个人的恶行的。但如果平庸之恶在社会中不被发现,当个人追求真善美却 无法获得身份认同时,这种困境就不仅仅是个人的伦理困境,更是整个社会 的伦理闲境。书中的女主人公选择成为树的同时也意味着放弃,放弃说话能 力和思考能力。但平庸之恶需要被思考,因为它能够被思考所克服。《素食 主义者》揭露的伦理困境是超越性别和国别的,需要大家一起思考,共同寻 找出路。

#### **Works Cited**

- 汉娜·阿伦特:《反抗"平庸之恶"》,陈联营译。上海:上海人民出版社,2014年。
- [Arendt, Hannah. Responsibility and Judgment, Trans. Chen Lianying. Shanghai: Shanghai People's Publishing House, 2014.]
- 陈红薇: "文学伦理学批评: 基于中西文化的文学批评理论创新",《文学跨学科研究》1(2021): 14-21。
- [Chen Hongwei. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Critical Theoretical Innovation Based on the Chinese and Western Cultures." *Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature* 1(2021): 14-21.]
- 陈礼珍: "复兴与创新:文学伦理学批评的过去、现状与未来",《文学跨学科研究》3(2019): 389-414
- [Chen Lizhen. "Rejuvenation and Innovation: The Past, Present and Future of Ethical Literary Criticism." Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 3(2019): 389-414.]
- 埃米尔·涂尔干: 《社会学方法的准则》, 狄玉明 译。北京: 商务出版社, 1995年。
- [Durkeim, Emile. The Rules of Sociological Method. Trans. Di Yuming. Beijing: China Commerceand Trade Press, 1995.]
- 韩江:《素食主义者》,千日译。重庆:重庆出版社,2013年。
- [Han Kang. The Vegetarian. Trans. Qian Ri. Chongqing: Chongqing Press, 2013.]
- 马晓俐、郝祥建: "《绿茶》中的伦理身份与死亡冲动", 《世界文学研究论坛》3(2019): 499-508。
- [Ma Xiaoli, Hao Xiangjian. "Ethical Identities and Death Impulsion in Green Tea." Forum for World Literature Studies 3(2019): 499-508.]
- Lim Daegeun. "Concept and Types of 'Trans-Identity'." Studies in Foreign Literature 1(2016):131-145.
- —. "Some Representations of Transidentity Characters." Comparative Literature 1(2020): 271-292.
- 聂珍钊: "文学伦理学批评在中国", 《杭州师范大学学报》5(2010): 35-41。
- [Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism in China." Journal of Hangzhou Normal University 5(2010): 35-41]
- ---: "文学伦理学批评:基本理论与术语",《外国文学研究》1(2010):12-22。
- [—. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Its Fundaments and Terms." Foreign Literature Studies 1(2010):12-22.]

- 一:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。
- —. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing:Peking UP, 2014.]
- ——: "文学伦理学批评的价值选择与理论建构", 《中国社会科学》10(2020):71-92。
- [-.. "Value Choice and the Theoretical Construction of Ethical Literary Criticism." Social Sciences in China 10(2020): 71-92.]
- 查尔斯•罗斯: "文学伦理学批评的理论建构", 杨革新 译, 《外语与外语教学》4(2015): 75-78。
- [Ross, Charles. "A Conceptual Map of Ethical Literary Criticism: An Interview with Nie Zhenzhao." Forum for World Literature Studies 1(2015):7-14.]
- 尚必武: "文学伦理学批评: 伦理选择、伦理意识与伦理行动",《文学跨学科研究》1(2021): 22-30。
- [Shang Biwu. "Ethical Literary Criticism." Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 1(2021): 22-30.]

# 论文学伦理学批评理论在韩国文学教育上的活用可 行性

# The Feasibility of Applying Ethical Literary Criticism to Korean Literary Education

申寅燮(Shin Inseop) 尹锡珉(Yoon Seokmin)

内容摘要:文学伦理学批评理论提出了"伦理欠缺"的问题意识,由于具有精巧的概念和理论构成、有效的分析方法,因此通过将其应用在文学教育上来实施道德教育和培养伦理意识是绰绰有余的。尤其在当今韩国的中高等教育中,哲学和伦理教育正在日益衰退,通过文学开展伦理教育则变得异常珍贵。本论文探索了将文学伦理学的批评理论作为韩国中高等教育机关的文学教育方法论的可能性。本论文以韩国的离散(diaspora)文学和多元文化文学的小说与诗为例,探索了文学伦理教育的可能性。这些文学作品中都包含有诸如伦理环境、伦理身份、伦理结、伦理线、伦理选择、伦理价值、伦理结境等核心概念。本文以在日文学中凸显的伦理环境、伦理身份、伦理线、伦理选择等概念为中心,以及以多元文化文学中凸显的伦理环境、伦理价值、伦理语境等概念为中心,探讨了对这些文学作品的解读可能性。在此基础上,考察了文学伦理学在韩国文学教育中的可行性。此外,我们期待作为文学危机的全新研究领域。

关键词: 文学伦理学; 韩国文学教育; 伦理环境; 伦理身份; 伦理价值; 伦理语境

作者简介: 申寅燮, 文学博士, 韩国建国大学师范学院日本语教育系教授, 研究方向主要为亚洲文学和离散文学。尹锡珉, 哲学博士, 韩国江原国立大学人文学院哲学系副教授, 研究方向主要为叙事哲学, 东亚哲学与文学比较。

**Title:** The Feasibility of Applying Ethical Literary Criticism to Korean Literary Education

**Abstract:** Ethical literary criticism is very suitable for cultivating moral and ethical awareness in the means of literature education, as it has a problematic idea of ethical absence and a set of elaborate concepts and theories, as well as valid analysis tools. In particular, in the situation that philosophy and ethics education are declining in Korean's secondary and higher education, ethics education by means of literature

has become all the more precious than any other time.

This article explores the possibility of adopting ethical literary criticism as a methodology for literary education in Korean secondary and higher education institutions. It takes the examples of Korean diaspora literature, novels and poem of multicultural literature, which can well contain key concepts such as ethical environment, ethical identity, ethical knot, ethical line, ethical choice, ethical context and so on, to explore the possibilities of literary ethics education.

By analyzing the noticeable concepts appeared in Korean Japanese literature, such as ethical environment, ethical identity, ethical line and ethical choice, and also the concepts in multicultural literature, such as ethical environment, ethical value and ethical context, the feasibility of Korean literary education in the sense of literary ethics is discussed. Furthermore, it is expected that as an academic study of literature and philosophy, literary ethics is to be established and expanded as a new area of study and to be contributed to the solution of the humanity crisis in Korea.

**Key words:** Ethical Literary; Korean Literature Education; Ethical Environment; Ethical Identity; Ethical Value; Ethical Context

Authors: Inseop Shin (Corresponding Author), Ph. D., is Professor of the Department of Japanese Language Education, College of Education, Konkuk University (1200 Neungdong-ro, Gwangjin-gu, Seuol05029, Republic of Korea) (Email: seoha@konkuk.ac.kr). (\*This paper was supported by Konkuk University in 2018); Seokmin Yoon (Main Author), Ph. D., is Associate Professor of Department of Philosophy, Kangwon National University (1, Kangwondaehak-gil, Chuncheonsi, Gangwon-do, 24341, Republic of Korea) (Email: threeight@hotmail.com).

人文学在过去作为社会发展、变革、革新的动力而运转着。在分析社会 众多问题的同时,人文学根据不同时代的要求给出了相当好的解决方案。 然 而,后期随着人类进入产业社会,尤其是高度发达的IT产业社会,人文学却 没能跟上这社会巨变的速度。在韩国,人文学被抨击为是不可随时而变的学问。 在人类与机器、人类与自然的冲突不断加深的情况下,在假想世界与现实世 界的矛盾问题等IT产业社会的巨变前,人文学所表现出的立场,不是诊断、 批评、提议,而 更多的是解释、默认和追随。因此,不得不承认这一评价并 没有言过其实。从这一意义上来看,曾经脍炙人口的人文学面临的危机说并 不是毫无根据的判断。

最近,韩国媒体上频频出现了人文学之危机这一话题。他们把人文学的 本质和其角色抛在一边置之不理,仅聚焦于人文学同其他学科融合的可能性 以及社会有用性,并接连不断地提出此类提议书和各种问券。在这种情况下, 人文学的从事者们本身就会畏缩不前,而周边也总是对其投以蔑视的视线。

尤其是韩国社会对近代曾经引领人文学的文学和文学研究者的期待比以往任 何时期都更加迫切。然而,只有对"随时而变"的无限期待。

面对如此萎缩的人文学,文学界上的聂珍钊教授所提出的文学伦理学批 评理论为我们敲响了警钟。这一警钟,是对把经济价值看得至高无上,只专 注于技术发展的人类敲响的: 也是对像这样以资本为中心的出版界为中心, 日渐荒废的文学界敲响的。 聂教授在其所提出的文学伦理学批评中备受瞩目 的一点,就是强调对被还原为市场价值的文学文本,肩负有批评的伦理性职责。 聂教授指出,批评的标准在市场重心主义下被瓦解,同批评分离的文学渐渐 失去了文学原有的意义和动力。在这一问题意识的前提下, 聂教授建构了文 学伦理学批评理论。聂教授的《文学伦理学批评导论》一书,针对人文学所 面临的危机,提出了"文学的本质到底是什么?"这一沉重的问题。

本论文首先探讨了韩国的文学教育能够以何种方式参照文学伦理学批评 理论。更进一步,探讨了可否将其作为分析韩国文学的批评理论的可行性。 本文在坚守这两大主题的前提下,介绍了《文学伦理学批评导论》前半部的 理论和思想组成部分。

首先, 聂教授指出了"精神粮食的文学仿佛变成了物质粮食"(聂珍钊4) 这一出版媒体的现实。随着文学原本所具有的功能在以物质为中心的市场主 义下衰退坍塌,聂教授指出"文学不是普通的物质消费品而是道德指南"(聂 珍钊4)。出版媒体的这一现实,不仅仅局限在聂教授所属的中国文坛,或是 译者所属的韩国文坛上。从这一衰退的现状中恢复文学的原有功能,也早已 超越了国界,成为了文学的本职任务。而文学伦理学批评理论正明确地表明 了其在现今社会中,想要继承古代经典的重要意义的这一教育价值和训诫的 意图。

古典不仅在各个时期都蕴含着不同的历史意义,而对古典的解读更是超 越了时代。古典之所以能够超越时代,以普遍性的故事而呈现出来,就在于 它从根本上探讨了人类的伦理问题。可以说,古典是提升伦理意识、加强伦 理自觉,为人类提供生活坐标的一本书。这种古典的积累对于形成一个时代 的文化并传承给后代,以伦理意识为基础的文学批评具有非常重要的作用。 从这一意义上讲,对于既是文学研究者,又是人文学研究者;乃至对于文学 教育工作者和人文学教育者来说,聂教授的文学伦理学批评理论都是一套非 常受欢迎的理论和思想。

然而,现实是冷酷无情的。文学,作为古典,虽然其有用性是有目共睹的: 但是在当今社会上,媒体却忙于将市场经济原理放在首位,比起伦理和道德, 更加强调在竞争中务必要取胜的经济原理。此时,聂教授站出来,开始关注 在市场中心主义抬头的文学界中所忽略的文学的本来功能,即伦理教育的功

能。他着眼于文学所具有的伦理性、教育性、训诫性的意义和价值,将文学 作为一种新的批评标准,构建了文学伦理学的理论体系。文学伦理学批评理 论正是剥离文学界暂时的以资本中心的工具性的经济原理: 旨在恢复作为文 学的原有动力和功能的人类的伦理意识。

一方面,韩国的小学初中高中正在通过强化道德和文学教育来继承文化、 加强维持社会秩序的意识和动力。虽然在韩国的文学批评理论中,文学和伦 理之间的关系多少有些疏远,但是在文学教育中却并非如此。这是因为从伦 理上来修养文学的方式,从很早以前就在国语教育中被广泛应用了。在韩国, "对国语教育中人性教育的关注,在国语教育的很多领域都得以实现。其中, 文学教育以解读文学作品,从本质上展开人之所以为人的探讨为前提;从这 一点来看,可以说文学教育是能够同人性教育相结合的最具代表性的领域" (Kim and Rye 80) 。

然而,在第四次产业革命时代,经济理论对道德教育和文学教育都产生 了不可忽视的影响。首先, 肩负文学教育的国语和教育来看, 韩国教育当局 从 2015 年修订教育课程这一举措开始, 在初中和高中开展了"一学期读一本 书"的正规国语教育项目。但是,我们从国语教育目标可以看到,作为"文 化创作和传承的基石"(2015年改正国语课教育课程别册53)的国语教育, 树立了培养五大能力的强化目标,即:培养"批判性、创意性的思考能力、 对资料和信息的运用能力、沟通能力、共同体/人际关系能力、文化欣赏能力、 自我反省/自我开发的能力"(2015年改正国语课教育课程别册53)。这些 目标作为参与社会活动竞争所必需的能力,但却是一条与道德实践和伦理意 识的培养相去甚远的实用主义道路。这里,作为国语教育一环的文学的本质 被界定为:"文学是通过解读把人生用语言形象化的作品,来获得快乐和领悟, 并与他人沟通的行为"(2015年改正国语课教育课程别册510)。这里,将 文学的本质界定为愉悦、领悟和沟通。

在文学教育中,对道德和伦理意识的培养逐渐消失 // 逐渐弱化的现象, 与在审美批评理论的扩张中,伦理批评不断萎缩的文学界极其相似。这种文 学教育的现实同聂教授所指出的以美学为中心的批评理论的得势颇具关联(聂 珍钊 4)。这是因为,决定文学教育乃至国语教育的目标和内容的人大多都是 审美批评理论的文学研究者。当前韩国的文学教育存在着将文学的社会责任、 社会参与、道德和伦理意识的培养等这些原有的属性看作是过去的或落后的 倾向。正因为文学教育上的文学,不仅要具有审美性,同时也要具有伦理性; 即文学应当要教育人的审美、伦理价值和意义。从这一点来看, 聂教授的文 学伦理学对文学教育具有很大的启示意义(曾巍60)。

在韩国,道德教育代替了文学的伦理教育。高中课程的道德科目上设有《古 典和伦理》这一课程作为职业前景选择的科目。这一科目定义为:"通过对古 典名著的探究和省察,培养人文学上的素养和理想的人性"(2015年改正国

语课教育课程别册671)。在《古典和伦理》这一课程中,主要讨论的古典 文学有:《论语》、《老子》、《庄子》、《金刚经》、《击蒙要诀》、《修 心诀》、《牧民心书》、《国家》、《尼各马可伦理学》、《伦理形而上学 定础》、《动 物解放》、《新约》、《古兰经》等属于哲学学科的书籍。这一课程的设定 目标是:"以包括韩国在内的东西方伦理学相关的古典文学为基础",探索 "人生的意义"和"有价值的人生";更进一步,探讨当代社会中有关伦理 性的争议性话题,如:现代科学技术、社会正义、生命伦理等(2015年改正 国语课教育课程 别册 6 65)。然而问题在于,这些古典文学与其说是以故事 为形式展开,不如说是将概念编成逻辑的、理论化的、令人费解的哲学书籍。 而这些晦涩难懂的哲学古典文学的阅读理解是培养伦理意识中极其艰难的过 程。相对于这一艰难的过程,文学伦理学的方法论则向我们提供了一个相对 容易的过程。如果用文学伦理学的观点来阅读《西游记》和《俄狄浦斯王》, 是不是可以更容易地唤醒我们伦理上的自觉呢?

自从文学背离了伦理,转向审美之后,文学的伦理涵养、道德实践的属 性都正在成为哲学或伦理学的专属物。倘若我们无法否认文学古典基本上是 以故事的形式来叙述人类的伦理问题这一点,那么在伦理问题变得至关重要 的 21 世纪,文学应该恢复其伦理性和训诫性的功能。在这里需要注意的是, 文学伦理学批评理论所关注的文学的目的,同当今韩国道德教育是一脉相承 的。《古典与伦理》这一科目的目的被定义为:"通过亲读古典文学的原文探 究其中的意义,对身为道德性主体的自我进行省察,顿悟(自我)同他人的 关系赋予了人生的何种意义,并以道德性的姿态与他人建立关系,在社会共 同体中具备追求正义的成熟的道德市民的素质,在自然和超越的关系中探究 人类生命的意义和生命的价值,以及探索和超越的关系,从而培养能够实现 道德实践的姿态和态度"(2015年改正国语课教育课程别册665),而聂教 授所提出的文学的目的就好像是这一定义的缩略版一样: "文学的根本目的 在于为人类的物质生活和精神生活提供道德警示,为人类的自我完善提供道 德的经验"(聂珍钊14)。以上这两个命题都提到了"道德的境界"这一脉络。

韩国的文学教育本应是带着文本,以讲故事的形式共同参与到伦理意识 的培养中去的。在今天,哲学教育在中等教育中简略到被一笔带过,在高等 教育中已经沦落为选修领域。因此,通过文学教育培养伦理意识,强化道德 实践变得比以往任何时候都更加迫切。若是以文学伦理学批评理论的观点重 新解读《俄狄浦斯王》、荷马史诗、《西游记》等古典文学,并将其添加到 文学教育中,那么就可以借文学教育之名来填补日渐孱弱的哲学教育、伦理 教育的空白之处。这一点的可行性,除了文学伦理学批评理论的伦理导向性 这一特征之外,还可以在其优越性上找到原因。文学伦理学批评理论借用了 既有的伦理学概念并将其加以变化,以更容易理解的概念重构,从而提高了 读者的可读性。这是因为:不需要引用既有的艰涩难懂的哲学家的名字和理论,

仅理解文学伦理学批评理论中所定义的概念,就能够充分地展开伦理讨论。 另外,在对普遍主义伦理观现实的解读力不断弱化的多元化社会中,更加呼 吁我们采用这一指向伦理选择、伦理身份、伦理脉络、伦理难题、伦理结等 多元主义伦理观的文学伦理学批评理论的视角。

文学伦理学批评理论中值得瞩目的是: 聂教授通过对文学的定义、目 的、功能、组成要素等的理论化,建构了批评理论的目的和标准。聂教授也 承认在西方拥有主导权的文学批评理论对中国文学界一直以来都产生了不小 的影响。"中国有关文学定义的争论,究其根源,仍然源于西方有关文学定 义的争论。中国的文学理论是在西方文学理论的影响下发展起来的……" (聂珍钊 25), 甚至是对于东方文化研究的反省和省察都是源自于西方社 会的理论,由此可见,在文学理论上西方的影响力是非常巨大的。聂教授对 于近代以来以西方为中心而展开的文学批评理论中所出现的问题做了如下概 括:"文化批评、美学批评、哲学批评等旗号的批评,往往颠倒了理论与文 学之间的依存关系, 割裂了批评与文学之间的内存联系, 存在着理论自恋 (theoretical complex)、命题自恋(preordained theme complex)、术语自恋(term complex)的严重倾向"(聂珍钊 164)。因此,文学批评是"文本的阅读与 阐释、分析与理解、而只注重批评家自己的某个文化、美学、哲学命题的求 证,造成理论与实际的脱节"(聂珍钊164)。这种观点,对于解释为何越来 越多的读者远离文本的原因非常有用。聂教授将这些人称为文学的文盲。"那 些官场腐败分子,也大多不读具有正面教诲价值的经典文学作品,相反对那 些媚俗的、色情的、厚黑的书籍耳熟能详。那些拒绝接受文学的道德启蒙和 正面教诲的人,实际上都是文学的文盲"(聂珍钊5)。

这里值得注意的是, 聂教授的文学伦理学批评是针对近代以来以西方为 中心的文学理论,树立了自己独立的立足点。 聂教授指出,文学文盲是造成 不健康社会的重要原因之一。这是敦促我们对把拜金主义看作是至高无上的 全球资本主义进行反省和省察的部分。身为文学批评家的聂教授所提出的前 提是:通过文学伦理学批评理论可以解决有关人类社会的伦理问题。"从根 本上说,文学伦理学批评的立场和最终目的是发现文学的伦理价值"(聂珍 钊7)。这一基本原则的提出也正是因为这个原因。

聂教授指出: "(美国伦理批评理论是)最早可以追溯到古代希腊,但 是一直没有建立起属于自己的出在哪通路论体系,尤其缺少明确的方法论"(聂 珍钊3): 同时也说明了文学伦理学批评理论的独创性大前提。他对于人类文 明发展过程提出了其前提是: "人类社会从自然选择到伦理选择再到科学选 择的过程,是人类文明发展的逻辑。……知性是通过自然选择获得的,但是 理性则是通过伦理选择获得的"(聂珍钊6)。这一大前提被直接应用于文学 伦理学批评理论的著名示例——对狮身人面像斯芬克斯典故的解读上。聂教 授在解读《斯芬克斯王》时所采用的读法独特,十分有趣。聂教授认为,斯 芬克斯是同时兼备了兽性因子(动物性因子)和人性因子(人性因子)这两者, 即它是正在向人类进化中的怪物。它所出的谜语也如同由四只脚到两只脚的 比喻那样,预示着它正在由动物进化成人类的过程。聂教授解释说,正如同 近亲相好的禁忌被作为伦理训诫而印刻出来那样,文学文本是指向人类理性 社会的训诫书;不管是《斯芬克斯王》还是荷马的史诗,都充分地显现了这 种训诫书的作用。在这一点上,聂教授用亚当和夏娃善果与恶果的例子来说 明"善恶一半不用来评价兽,而只是用来评价人,是评价人的专有概念。因此, 善恶是人类伦理的基础"(聂珍钊 35-36)。

正如同聂教授所说,我们所熟知的童话书中出现的动物故事也同样如此。 在给孩子们讲解故事时,找出为何人类与动物不同以及他们之间的差异点, 在小学的文学教育中是有效的。就以韩国传统童话中《变成牛的懒鬼》这一 故事为例。故事讲的是一个不干活、好吃懒做的懒鬼从周围人那里听说了"吃 完就睡不干活,就会变成牛"的传言。但是这个懒鬼心想变成牛也挺舒服的。 某个路过的老人给了懒鬼一个面具,并告诉他若是戴上它就会变成牛,那就 可以享福了。懒鬼把面具戴上,果然变成了一头牛。于是每天挨鞭子抽打, 没日没夜地干活。懒鬼想后悔也来不及了。变成牛的懒鬼这才明白了自己的 无知, 决心寻死。但经过一番迂回曲折之后, 懒鬼终于重新变回了人, 并且 成为了一个勤奋的人。描写动物和人类互相沟通的童话或叙事在古今中外都 屡见不鲜;在获得同动物形成反差的人类的内心世界的过程中,这些童话可 以说是非常重要的文学教育材料。

Ξ

聂教授所独创的斯芬克斯因子是试图在文学文本中引入伦理教育时非常 有效的解读方法。聂教授认为:"'斯芬克斯因子'是由两部分组成的—— 人性因子(human factor)与兽性因子(animal factor)。这两种因子有机地 组合在一起,其中人性因子是高级因子,兽性因子是低级因子"(聂珍钊 38)。因此,前者能够操纵后者,使得人类成为具有伦理意识的存在。这恰 好说明了文学作品中所描写的善恶共存现象。

仅用"善与恶"这个两项对立的单纯性来解释现代复杂的文本世界是极 其有限的。因此,在这里所引入的东西,可以被理解为是斯芬克斯因子两级 之间的光谱。在这两级之间,通过对伦理选择过程的解读,从而打开了伦理 批评的可能性。另外, 兽性因子可以被分为自然意志和自由意志。"自然意 志主要是人的原欲即力比多(libido)的外在表现形式, 自由意志是人的欲望 (desire)的外在表现形式,理性意志是人的理性的外在表现形式。"(聂珍 钊 39) 在这三种意志的关系之中,伦理选择成为了可能。除此之外,他还建 立了伦理环境、伦理秩序、伦理混乱、伦理难题、伦理禁忌、伦理选择等自 己的批评用语和议论体系。从这一点来看,可以说文学伦理学批评理论是以 人类的欲望和伦理的关系为基石的一种全新的批评理论。

"超越时代和文化,能够探索普遍存在的伦理价值的书籍"(Park 101) 被定义为正典或古典。从这一观点中,我们可以看出文学伦理学批评理论的 理想目标。这是因为,读书这一经验是自己比较想要内化的伦理价值,并为 了接受它而发生的或选择、或拥护、或批判的行为。这同聂教授所说的"文 学是特定历史阶段伦理观念和道德生活的独特表达形式,文学在本质上是伦 理的艺术"(聂珍钊32)。这句话一脉相通。在韩国教育过程中,文学教育 和古典、伦理教育, 也都可以参考文学伦理学批评的这一读法。

举例来说,由于古典文学的文本都各自具有其时代伦理价值的导向,站 在这一文学伦理学批评理论的角度上来解读日本帝国主义殖民统治时代的代 表性小说《万岁前》(1924)的同时,也可以开展文学教育。这一作品问世 的当时,其文学伦理的基准在于反帝国主义和反封建主义的价值。作品中凸 显了与亲目文学作品所表现的伦理性形成对比的伦理选择。

在高呼独立万岁的三一运动发生的前一年1919年的冬天,一个名叫李寅 华的朝鲜青年从留学地东京出发,途径名古屋、神户,从下关登上关釜联络船, 到达釜山。再从釜山换乘火车直奔京城的漫长旅程。他在日本留学的期间, 突然接到了妻子病危的急电,因此不得不放弃"年终考试"而赶回家。在船上, 他遭到了沦为日本人走狗的朝鲜刑警的日语审问。于是周围的日本人就看着 同为朝鲜人的两人用日语一问一答的滑稽场面。虽然用韩语回答才符合忠于 祖国的伦理,但是因为害怕同刑警发生纠纷,无法踏上归国之路的伦理环境 制造了这一对立的矛盾。虽然他做出了隐瞒自己韩国人的身份,假装自己是 日本人的伦理选择, 但是最终却陷入了感觉自己脱离了人类社会, 成为流浪 者的情感中。没能守住自己的伦理的矛盾将自己从理性的人类中分离出来。 像这样,揭开伦理意识的这种努力是该小说的主要问题意识,可以将其看作 是文学教育的一种方案。

一方面,小说刻画出了祖国在遭受日本侵略的现实中,主人公所表现出 的锋利的民族主义伦理意识。另一方面,小说又描写了家中早给定好婚约的 妻子,对在东京酒馆中遇见的日本女招待暗中生情等封建婚姻制度、家庭、 自由恋爱间的伦理上进退两难的境地。在这里,在殖民地时代家长式作风的 封建制度和自由恋爱的近代性特征之间,我们能够读出应当如何化解这个伦 理难题。

再举金史良的《走进光明》(1933)为例。作家金史良是日本侵占时期 居日活动的文学家。这部小说描写了在日本帝国和沦为殖民地的祖国这一现 实中所产生的归属性的混乱。东京大学的大学生青年知识分子的日语名字被 称为南(Minami)老师,而他原本的韩国名字为 Nam(南)。这部小说主要

描写了该主人公从自己的日语名字中寻找韩国名字及自己的归属感的问题。 因此,如果将这部小说作为伦理教育来阅读,那么将涉及殖民地时期在日本 作为知识分子生活的伦理环境和矛盾、伦理身份等问题。其中,可以关注的 是在日语小说中标上韩语发音标记的双重语言问题(Jooyoung, "A Study on Miyamoto Yuriko's Ethical Choice" 136) .

在韩国近代文学史上屈指可数的文学文本基本上都包涵了各时代所具有 的伦理价值。以现代小说为例,赵廷来作家的长篇小说《丛林万里》就是在"文 学文盲"时代探索全球化时代下伦理问题的极佳例子。这部长篇小说以中国 为背景,从韩国人、中国人、日本人等各种登场人物的立场出发,在全球主 义和地方主义交汇之处探讨了伦理身份的相互冲突问题。赵廷来作家从宏观 的、微观的角度来看待这些问题,而从文学伦理学批评的观点来分析其被评 为韩国文坛巨匠的原因,是最清楚不过的。如果能将代表这个时代的小说应 用于文学教育上,我们又应当将着眼点放于何处呢?

首先,资本主义的欲望和信赖之间的伦理矛盾可以成为文学伦理教育的 一个极好素材。该小说中登场的人物中有两位居住在中国的韩国人,分别叫 全大光和金贤坤。比起自己本身的利害关系,他们从根本上更加重视对对方 的信任。因此,可以针对造福大家的共同善这一主题意识来展开伦理教育, 毕竟这是比拜金主义更加重要的价值。最重要的一点,是要学习到在资本主 义残酷的竞争中,所谓胜利不仅仅是指竞争关系,还要启动人类的伦理性。 另外,在这一过程中,我们就能够读出对未来的希望和期许。"读者主要借 全大光和金贤坤的言语, 可以感知经济大国中国的发展景象和随之而来的环 境问题、伦理问题。而作为辅线,北京大学韩国留学生宋宰炯和北大中国学 生李燕玲的登场, ……就是在全球化和地方化的碰撞点上, 未来的希望被寄 托在了这对恋人的身上" (Jooyoung, "China at the Crossroads of Globalism and Localism" 160) .

兀

文学的根本目的是道德警示,而向我们展示道德的经验是文学伦理学批 评理论的基本前提。这意味着通过文学文本、培养伦理意识、伦理自觉、通 过文学使得伦理教育这一表述和树立文学伦理教育的概念都成为可能。那么, 文学伦理教育如何在韩国文学教育中实现呢? 下面将通过分析具体的文学作 品为例来探究其可行性。

伦理环境、伦理身份、伦理结、伦理线等文学伦理学的基本概念在在日 韩国文学中都有着明确的体现。在日本定居的一代人,从殖民地的移居者变 成了独立国家的移居者。在很多在日文学作品中,都可以读到在民族、国籍 变化的伦理环境中,由于伦理身份的变化而产生的伦理矛盾和伦理选择。例 如李恢成的《流域》(1992)探讨的就是"为何在日本出生"这一伦理环境

下的伦理身份的问题。以聂教授的文学伦理学批评理论为基础来开展文学教 育的情况下,可以针对由于父亲的伦理选择造成了儿子伦理身份的变化,以 及由此引发的伦理矛盾、其解决方法等出现的伦理价值的问题进行探讨。尤 其要指出的是, 若将二十世纪韩半岛的历史设定为伦理环境, 就可以针对国 家伦理、民族伦理或者社会伦理等这些多少有些沉闷的问题进行探讨,从而 锻炼学生们自身的伦理意识。

我们最应当关注的是:对父亲非伦理行为的批判意识和所谓"孝"的传 统伦理之间产生的伦理混乱这一伦理困境问题。除此之外,在父辈的思考方 式和子女辈思考方式之间所存在的不同的伦理结构问题。在儿子形成自己的 归属感时,父亲提出的自己的伦理选择导致了同儿子之间产生了伦理混乱。 父亲的伦理环境及其选择源自于在日韩国人非自发性的在"日本"这个异乡 作为离散人群生活的历史环境。然而, 儿子的伦理环境却脱离了这一历史环境, 选择了可以自发地成为离散人群生活这一历史性存在的伦理身份。在这样的 故事发展中,我们可以探讨如下问题:伦理身份及其选择是在怎样一种情况 下形成的; 世代之间的伦理身份和其选择是否能够协调一致。这就是通过文 学开展的伦理教育, 也是文学伦理学批评理论的核心内容。

举例来说,在阅读《流域》时,可以设定以下几个核心要点:

- ①父亲与儿子产生矛盾的原因是: 日本帝国战败时, 父亲在库页岛为了 躲避苏联军队,抛下所有亲属只带着自己的家人偷偷逃到日本这一非伦理性 的选择。
  - ②面对父亲的行为, 儿子也继承了抛下亲属自己逃亡的伦理性责任。
- ③由于同日本帝国主义合作,父亲成为了背叛民族伦理的人;但是儿子 自己也这么认为。这是因为儿时在库页岛生活时,主人公对日本帝国的胜利 深信不疑。
- ④继承了父亲伦理性责任的主人公重返库页岛,为34年前父亲只带着自 己的家人秘密逃出小岛的行为磕头谢罪。
- ⑤在日本身为旅日同胞而生活的主人公,因信仰对立,在与同胞进行冷 战的经历中曾说: "我认为在日韩国人每天都会遭到歧视,这是一大前提。 但是如果继续在日本国内生活,那么在某个瞬间就会忘却这种歧视,自己开 始接受这种来自外部的区别对待"(Lee 242)。
- ⑥在日韩国人处于一个需要再三反问自己的伦理身份的位置上。因此, 他必定要询问父亲作为在日韩国人的伦理性。
- (7)主人公在德国与一位韩国女性坠入爱河,之后却抛弃了她。他却承担 起了这份伦理性的责任。
- ⑧在去往前苏联的旅程中,主人公以父亲为榜样,探讨了自己的伦理身 份和伦理选择。

通过以上八个场面,可以对文学伦理学的教训进行如下思考。第一,伦

理环境如何?第二,伦理选择是怎样的?第三,伦理身份的问题会带来怎样 的结局?对这些问题的全面讨论将成为从伦理的角度上来阅读文学的一种训 练过程。围绕这伦理线上的各种伦理结问题是如何解决的: 在解决的过程中 又存在有何种伦理价值。对这一切的分析过程实际上能够敦促读者对自身的 自我认识和反省。除此之外,在冷战结束之后,即将到来的新时代的变化也 可以被解读为重新确立父子关系的新伦理环境。在这种变化的伦理环境中, 作为伦理主体的读者能够学习到伦理身份和其选择变化的可能性。

伦理环境、伦理选择、伦理价值、伦理语境(ethical context)等文学伦 理学上的核心概念在离散文学作品中表现得更为显眼。文学伦理学批评理论 也可以应用于21世纪多元文化社会中的文学教育上。韩国目前正在创作和普 及很多多元文化的童话。在全球主义流行的世界中, 多元文化童话旨在增进 对多种族社会的理解,在韩国也广泛流行。其作品大多以解释多元文化社会 的伦理环境、伦理价值为主。摈弃歧视和排斥、以追求人性和共存的伦理价 值为导向的文学训诫性,正是多元文化主义文学的主要特征。多元文化主义 的小说和诗在确保了其文学性的同时, 在目前的韩国文坛上显现出尤为重要 的意义。由于不同文化间的冲突和定居所产生的文化多样性或文化多元性的 现象,在人们按照全球主义下的经济规律而移动的同时,变得日益突出。

韩国多元文化小说的代表作品孙洪奎的《伊斯兰肉铺》和河钟五的诗文 学可以说是多元文化作品的代表。孙洪奎的小说和河钟五的诗将具有多元文 化主义特征的人生中所运转的的伦理问题视为焦点。《伊斯兰肉铺》和河钟 五的诗集通过小说和诗开辟了韩国多元文化文学的新方向。这些作品指出了 韩国多元文化主义所具有的根本性的诟病。在韩国,移民被称作是"多元文 化(人)"。这一称呼暗藏着将定居的一方视为"主体",将移居来的一方 视为"他人"的思维。用以下文学伦理教育的观点来分析这些作品时,对提 高多元文化主义的伦理意识是颇具意义的。

在阅读《伊斯兰肉铺》时,可以设定以下几个核心要点:

- ①伦理环境和伦理身份的设定:身为孤儿的话者自小暴露在暴力的环境 下, 在孤儿院流浪后被土耳其出身的退役军人收养。
- ②被收养的少年在非血缘关系的韩国的山上贫民区中生活,周围都是受 过伤的人们。在这种环境下,少年意识到自己的伦理身份,并实践了共生与 联合的伦理价值。
- ③山上贫民区中生活的人们都是同主人公具有相似伦理语境的人:外国 移民者、家庭暴力的受害者、贫困者、有口吃的人、心神恍惚的人等等。
- ④设定主人公少年对种族歧视的对抗理论。(安娜大婶熟睡的脸庞非常 奇怪。虽说是个不折不扣的典型韩国女人,但若说她是华裔、日裔、或者越南裔、 印度尼西亚裔,似乎也不会感到奇怪。不,即使说是西班牙裔也好,穆拉托 或桑博拉人也好。最终,安娜大婶到底是哪儿的人,遗传了谁的基因都开始

变得模糊不清起来。甚至开始觉得人类不就是这样从最初的混血儿中诞生的 吗? 哈桑大叔和亚摩斯大叔也是如此。由于他们在韩国度过了漫长的岁月, 就连他们顽固的品性也在这里被驯服了。虽然可能有人一眼就看得出来他们 是外国人, 但也有人完全觉察不到。即便有人告诉说他们来自于土耳其和希腊, 也还是有人认为他们本来就是韩国人(Son 159-160)。

所谓人类, 最初并不是均质的、整齐的、同质的存在, 而是超越多样性 的多元存在。然而,在不正确的伦理语境中,这一多元性被认定为是异质性, 从而导致了歧视和排斥的产生。在历史上,混血儿在所谓纯血统这种错误过 分强调民主族群中一直以来都受到歧视和排斥。在《伊斯兰肉铺》这部小说中, 我们可以看到: 在多元文化主义的伦理价值中解决了在纯血统和混血儿的伦 理语境中所产生的伦理冲突和伦理矛盾。

我们都是多元性的存在。作为共同体的组成部分,我们各自只有认识到 共同体所追求的伦理价值和伦理语境,才有可能做出正确的伦理选择。《另 一边的天国》(2004年)中收录的《一个亚洲人》就像苏格拉底的命题一样, 向我们展现了关于"认识自我"的伦理语境。

# 一个亚洲人

走在面牧洞一条幽静的小巷中 一个黑黝黝的亚洲人上前来搭话 听着像是在说巴基斯坦语或斯里兰卡尼泊尔语 于是我摆了摆手就走了

外国人虽然说的是同一句话, 但听起来却不一样 一辈子都悲伤的男子 耶稣基督 年少时就离家 流浪异国他乡 修剪树木累了 就是那么吵吵嚷嚷的

很久以前我重返华盛顿的繁华街区 试着跟白人搭话 却只见他两手一伸就走了 英文单词发音错误 嘟嘟囔囔 不管是韩国人还是日本人 可能都听成了中文吧 可能那黑黝黝的亚洲人韩语说得太生疏了 以至于我听成了巴基斯坦语或斯里兰卡尼泊尔语 站在大街上才明白过来 再回去 那个亚洲人已不在了 (Ha 64)

这首诗的文学伦理教育可以聚焦于下面的争议点,即: "黑黝黝的一个 亚洲人"的伦理身份,和在华盛顿话者遭到忽视的伦理身份的对立。这向我 们展示了:通过伦理身份的对立,向我们展示了身为亚洲人,实践所谓共同 体纽带的伦理价值的过程。正如同耶稣基督的比喻那样,通过倾听他人的话 来确立自己的伦理性反省:而这一反省正是这首诗所指向的伦理价值的实践 动力。也就是说,对自我的认识,是可以通过他人的眼中所反映出的自我来 实现的。而这只有通过伦理上的反省才能实现。在这首诗中,韩国人对其他 亚洲人眼中所映照出的韩国人的面貌进行反省和省察,必须要证明伦理身份 自觉的伦理存在。

在被称为第四次产业革命的时代、后人类时代、新普通时代的今天,关 于人类与世界、人类与机器、人与人之间的共生与和解的相关伦理问题比以 往任何时候都更加重要。这些伦理问题以世界市民教育、人性教育等名义被 广泛地实践着。其根源在于同伦理缺乏有关的问题意识。虽然文学伦理学批 评理论强调的是古典价值的实践和显现,但实际上其理论价值在解决现在及 不久的将来人类社会上的伦理问题方面发挥着更大的作用。文学伦理学批评 理论提出了伦理欠缺的问题意识,由于具有精巧的概念和理论构成,有效的 分析方法,因此通过文学教育来实施道德教育和培养伦理意识是非常充分的。 尤其是在韩国的中高等教育中,哲学和伦理教育正在日益衰退,通过文学的 伦理教育变得无比珍贵。聂珍钊教授的《文学伦理学批评导论》一书被翻译 成韩语即将出版,期待这本书能够被介绍到韩国文学教育中,并加以利用, 对文学伦理教育助一臂之力。此外,我们期待作为文学和哲学的跨学科研究, 文学伦理学的建立和扩展将会成为克服韩国人文学危机的全新研究领域。

#### **Works Cited**

聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。

[Nie Zhenzhao. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]

Eunjung Choi, Kate Jeong. "A lazy Cow." Blue Bird Korean Folktales 10. Seoul: Samsung, 2016.

Kim, Sa Ryang. To the Light. Tokyo: Kodansha, 1999.

Yeom, Sangseop. Man se jeon(The days before the March 1st Independence Movement). Seoul: Munji.

Lee, Hoe-sung. Watershed Above. Tokyo: Kodansha, 2010.

Son, HongGyu. The Islamic Butcher. Seoul: Munji. 2010.

Ha, Jongoh. Heaven on the Other Side. Paju Korea: MUNHAKDONGNE. 2004.

Hyunjeong Kim., Su-yeol Ryu. "Analysis and Implications of Character Education Factors in Middle and High School Literature Textbooks." The Journal of Curriculum Evaluation 21.1(2018): 79-106.

Park, Jin-kyung. "Cultivation of Character through Literary Reading Education for High-Schoolers— Contemplation through the Rhetorical Ethos." Rhetorica 22(2015): 99-139.

- Jooyoung Kim. "A Study on Miyamoto Yuriko's Ethical Choice in Her Novel Writing." Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 1.1(2017): 135-143.
- --. "China at the Crossroads of Globalism and Localism: A Review of Jungrae Jo'Great Jungle." Foreign Literature Studies 36.1(2014):159-162.
- 曾巍: "文学伦理学批评与文学教育传播机制", 《文学跨学科研究》5.1(2021):56-64。
- [Zeng Wei. "Ethical Literary Criticism and the Communication Mechanism of Literary Education." Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 5.1(2021): 56-64.]
- 《2015年改正国语课教育课程》(教育部告示 第2015-74号[别册5]33-170)。教育部. <a href="https://ceri.knue.ac.kr/pds/2015\_01\_language.pdf">https://ceri.knue.ac.kr/pds/2015\_01\_language.pdf</a>
- 《2015年改正国语课教育课程》(教育部告示 第 2015-74 号 [ 别册 6] 1-86)。教育部 . < https:// ceri.knue.ac.kr/pds/2015\_07\_ethics.pdf>

# The Ethical Implications of Virtue in *De la littérature* by Madame de Staël

# Soon-Hee Lee & Young-ho Lee

Abstract: At the exit of the revolutionary troubles, Madame de Staël publishes her De la littérature to diagnose the contemporary literature and to open its new possibility. In this work, she suggests a new literature which strongly participates in the establishment of the citizen ethics and thus consequently contributes to human perfectibility. In this perspective, "virtue" is a significant notion in the work, and it is represented as an element to promote ethical progress. In this paper, therefore, we tried to examine the relationship between the ethical implications of virtue and literary perfectibility that is represented in Madame de Staël's De la littérature. First, we study various ethical implications of "virtue" which is a key point in the ideas presented by Madame de Staël as well as the relevant issue of philosophers in the eighteenth century. Additionally, we analyse through Madame de Staël's discussions how "virtue" realized in the literary work functions as the core value of "progress," in other words what are the relations between ethics and literary progress. Through this analysis, we were able to see that she had a very specific idea of the future literature based on virtue: if she stressed the importance of "empathy" and "understanding of others," moral perfection of an individual and free will, it was to claim literature as a "sentimental education" wherein sentiment and reason simultaneously operate aiming for consolation and happiness of the social community beyond an individual, and wherein the Holy Trinity comprises morality, sensibility, and intelligence. Consequently, we identified that the discussion of "literature," as illustrated by a woman's intellect in a period of anxiety and confusion, continues to be relevant in certain aspects.

**Key words:** Madame de Staël; *De la Literature*; virtue; ethics and literary progress; perfectibility

**Authors:** Soon-Hee Lee is Associate Professor in the Department of French Language and Literature at Korea University (Seoul, Korea). Her major research area is French literature in the 19<sup>th</sup> century, in particular, François-René de Chateaubriand (E-mail: agneslee@korea.ac.kr); **Young-ho Lee** (Corresponding Author) is a professional researcher of the Center for Japanese Studies at Dongguk University. His research areas are Japanese modern and contemporary literature

and culture, in particular, Korean residents in Japan and Korean diaspora research (E-mail: kordiaspora@naver.com).

标题: 斯塔尔夫人的《文学论》中美德的伦理学含义

内容摘要:在大革命的混乱时期之后,斯塔尔夫人执笔《文学论》,旨在分 析当代文学,并为文学的未来展示新的可能性。在此,作者所展示的文学, 是可以对市民伦理确立起作用的文学,同时更是可以为人类的完全可能性作 出贡献的文学。因此道德作为可以维护伦理的一种价值,在文学作品中占据 着重要位置,也被认为是伦理进步的要素。通过以上内容我们可以观察到包 含在斯塔尔夫人作品当中的关于道德的伦理性含义与文学的完全可能性之间 的相关关系。

笔者选取了作为十八世纪哲学家面的主要论点,同时也是作为斯塔尔夫 人思想中的重要主要核心的道德来对它多样的伦理含义进行了分析, 并且通 过对斯塔尔夫人所提出的理论详细分析了在文学作品中体现的道德是如何作 为"革新"的动因与"进步"的核心起作用——换而言之伦理与文学的进步 之间有何关系——的问题。此外,为了使感性与理性同时起作用的作为"情 感教育"的文学、为了社会共同体成员的幸福的超越了个人的文学、道德与 感性以及知性三位一体的文学的地位成立,笔者分析了斯塔尔夫人对"共感" 与"对他人的理解"、个人的道德完善与自由意志的重要之处所进行的强调 的意义。通过以上分析, 我们可以观察到当时不安与混乱的时代中以为女性 知识分子所勾画"文学"相关的讨论在今天的哪些方面来看依然有现实意义。 关键词:斯塔尔夫人:文学论:道德:伦理与文学进步:完全可能性 作者简介:李顺姬,高丽大学法语法文系副教授。研究方向为19世纪法国文 学,以弗朗索瓦 - 勒内·德·夏多布里昂 (François-René de Chateaubriand) 的作品研究为主;李荣镐(通信作者),东国大学日本学研究所专门研究员。 研究方向为日本近现代文学与文化,以在日朝鲜人与朝鲜人流散研究为主。

#### Introduction

Madame de Staël-who strived to renew the spirit of French literature through the active acceptance and translation of foreign literature—is not unknown in the East Asian countries of South Korea and Japan. In case of Japan, her name and life were initially mentioned in the Meiji era. After 1948, Madame de Staël and her works began to be earnestly studied. However, after the 1990s, the translation of her works and research are even more animated. In South Korea, in the 1930s—comparatively later than in Japan-Madame de Staël was first mentioned as a western writer and liberal thinker who expressed the liberation of the self. Although the translation of her works and research was not progressing as actively in South Korea as in Japan, since the 2000s, translations of her major writings and related research papers were being constantly published. Madame de Staël advocated the exchange of ideas between nations by emphasizing "the hospitality" of foreign literature and was an asset for one's motherland's literature. Importantly, she was initially introduced to South Korea and Japan when the two countries started preparing for modern times by introducing and translating foreign literature. The dynamism of her cosmopolitanism is thus confirmed in modern East Asia.

Although the cosmopolitanism of Madame de Staël was concretely expressed in De l'Allemagne (1810), the draft of this book was already drawn in De la littérature, published in 1800. The year 1800 symbolized a period of transition from the eighteenth to the nineteenth century as well as a year initiating a new century. However, the situation changed with the occurrence of the French revolution. With a promise of stability and order, Consulat took over instead of Directoire suffering from constant difficulties of governing France from 1795 to 1799. Like most contemporaries, Madame de Staël also had an expectation from Consulat and Napoleon who was Premier Consul. This political situation also called for a transition in the literary world.

The literature of the Ancien Régime was swayed by the tempest of the French Revolution and subsequently disappeared. Based on "the freedom of expression" that was stipulated in Article 11 of "Déclaration des droits de l'homme et du citoyen," writings reflecting the contemporary trends, such as pamphlets, writings for slandering, newspaper articles, etc., freely expressed their views. This situation that "exists only by revolution, suits only to revolution, and will disappear with revolution someday" created a wave of awakening among literary persons. Regardless of their political stance towards the Revolution, they shared their views on bringing order back to literature filled with disorder and confusion. François-René de Chateaubriand insisted on Christianity as the spiritual foundation for reconstructing society and wanted to reform French literature through religious inspiration and sensibility. He diagnosed the contemporary literature and opened the possibility of improvement through Génie du Christianisme (1802), while Madame de Staël advocated a collaborative literature with the ideology of a strong government in a new and progressive society based on equality and freedom.

As soon as De la littérature—with its belief in "perfectibility," that is, knowledge, reason, and the linear progress of civilization—was published, it was

<sup>1</sup> Jean-François de La Harpe. Lycée ou cours de littérature anciennes et modernes, t. II. Paris: Didier (1834) 642.

faced with fierce controversy. Ideologies succeeding the ideas of the Enlightenment in the eighteenth century, and the philosophy of perfectibility advocated by Madame de Staël who had the same ideology, were regarded as insufficient explanations for the violence of the French Revolution, the Reign of Terror, as well as the contemporary literature, which became the target of harsh condemnation as "the political and philosophical fantasy" and "the amusement of the imagination" (Cf. Lotterie, "Chateaubriand contre Staël" 9-22). However, Madame de Staël was also aware of the problems surrounding the current situation of France. According to her, contemporary literature seemed to retrograde the progress of the intellect instead of guaranteeing it as "the deviation" of history and transform the biggest cause into passionate actions. To overcome the conflict caused by passions, in De la littérature, she suggested the reclamation of virtue as the intrinsic inclination of human beings towards goodness, and through this, the realization of "the ideal beautiful of the moral world" (DL 67).

Accordingly, in this paper, we will consider virtue — a key component of the literary spirit and crucial for the progress of the literature —, its ethical implications as well as the literature programme designed by Madame de Staël based on virtue. Through this, we can identify the positive future of French literature illustrated by a creative mind based on a firm belief in human beings in the early century when stability and order seemed to be promised but anxiety and confusion still remained and the draft of the contemporary literature that followed.

#### I. The Implication of Virtue

It is not only impossible to draw one unified meaning from the word, virtue, which is defined in various ways according to the context, but it is also difficult to comprehend the nature of the value. Madame de Staël's idea of virtue is not easy to define in a word: it is "a principle of action" expressed as "impulse" (DL 378) preceding rational reasoning and is also called "morale." Ahead of examining virtue as expressed by Madame de Staël, let us review the encyclopaedic definition of the word.

In Dictionnaire de l'Académie française, the representative French language dictionary, from the first edition (1694) to the fifth edition (1798), the definition of virtue is consistently explained as the "habit to avoid evil and to do a good deed,

<sup>1</sup> The work of Madame de Staël referred to in this paper is De la littérature, eds. by Gérard Gengembre and Jean Goldzink. Paris: Garnier Flammarion. 1991, De l'Allemagne, ed. by Simone Balayé. Paris: Garnier Flammarion. 1968. We also notify that when quoting works, we indicate the former in the parenthesis as DL corresponding page, and the latter as DA corresponding page.

and such mental attitude." Only when considering various modifiers, for example "Christian," "ethical," "intellectual," "acquired," etc., we can assume that virtue has an extensive meaning.

The eighteenth century directly affected Madame de Staël, and even though many writers reconsidered several relationships between an individual and society, they emphasized the moral value and attitude among members of society, and developed diverse discussions about the social and ethical dimensions of virtue (Antoine 128–129). Encyclopédie summarized the ideas of the Enlightenment and philosophy and explained the concept of virtue as follows:

As virtue is an abstract word, when people encounter this word, it is difficult to have a clear thinking. Virtue is usually everything that becomes all duties of human being and the driving force of ethics. However, due to this ambiguous meaning, people have an arbitrary judgment in many cases. [...] In order to clarify the concept of virtue more, it is necessary to judge the motives of the deed. The more pure the motive is, the more sincere virtue is. [...] The mind of human being is fascinated by various kinds of passions and the spirit has no consistency, but it is fluid. The tranquility of one moment is necessary. When various kinds of passions stop roaring, and when the consciousness speaks to us with unignorable tone, the clear concepts of virtue brightly shine in the glittering sparkle. [...] We know the fact that the etymology of virtue resonates with "power," and "courage." It is applied to the existence that is originally weak but is going to be strong with its own will. Persuading oneself and putting one's inclination under the domination of reason, this is the consistent effort of virtue right away.

Since the concept is abstract and ambiguous, to understand it, we have to pacify our passions and listen to the voice of consciousness. Etymologically, virtue has originated from Latin "virtus" meaning "courage" and "mental energy." Thus, an idealistic approach and efforts are required to awaken and maintain virtue in oneself. In this concept of virtue, the social function is clarified through the contrast with "wisdom."

Wisdom is to recognize accurately what is beneficial and to distinguish and select well what seemed to be a benefit in appearance. Virtue goes forward further. Virtue sincerely bears goodness toward the society. In case of need, for goodness of the society, it sacrifices its benefit and thinks to receive rewards in the middle of feeling it as beautiful. In need of sacrifice, it does not hesitate.

Here, it is specified that virtue prioritizes the benefit of a community and is willing to sacrifice its own benefit to achieve this. In his Dictionnaire philosophique (1764), Voltaire criticized the speculative characteristic of Encyclopédie and attempted to eliminate unnecessary explanations; a similar concept of virtue can be identified here. While Voltaire briefly defines virtue as "goodness toward neighbors", he also refers to virtue as extending a warm helping hand to those who are in trouble and comforting those who are neglected. Therefore, according to Voltaire, virtue can be alternatively called "charity," the essential goodness of the society for as long as we constitute society, and the good deeds exchanged among people. The concept of virtue understood by Montesquieu is almost similar. Virtue is acquired through individual ethical choices, through their temperance of passion and implies pursuing the benefits for a community. Virtue, the essential value required for a functioning society, is continuously threatened by passions. However, it is also the root of happiness and affection for mankind (Dornier).

Although Jean-Jacques Rousseau is regarded as a writer whose sensibilities are different from philosophers contributing to Encyclopédie, he had an identical opinion about virtue. Yves Vargas had classified the ethical, political, and philosophical dimensions of virtue revealed in Rousseau's works (Vargas). According to him, virtue's ethical dimension comprised governing passions without revealing sensuous desires, and its philosophical dimension comprised adjusting the will of an individual to that of the universe and the ability to desire and maintain freedom. The similarity found in these three layers of virtue indicates an effort to illustrate the term as an inclination that exists in human instincts and maintain it. Like philosophers of Encyclopédie, Rousseau placed virtue's standard in "the consciousness," and as mentioned in *Emile* that "I have to ask myself what I want to do. All that feel good is good. All that feel bad is bad," he held sensation and emotion as standards of judgment for aptly selecting consciousness. Thus, for Rousseau, virtue is closely related to reasons, consciousness, sensations, and emotions.

Similarly, in the discussion about virtue, we can identify virtue as the moral value operating in the dimensions of individual and society. Virtue, intrinsic

<sup>1</sup> Voltaire. Dictionnaire philosophique, eds. by Raymond Naves and Olivier Ferret. Paris: Classiques Garnier (2008) 386.

<sup>2</sup> Jean-Jacques Rousseau. Émile ou de l'éducation Émile et Sophie, eds. by Charles Würz and Pierre Burgelin. Paris: Gallimard (1969) 594.

inclination of human beings towards goodness but due to his ethical choices, is essential for the moral development of an individual and for realizing the goodness of a community. While reconsidering the problem of an individual and society, for writers in the eighteenth century who inquired into the progress and development of human history, virtue was the most fundamental value that guaranteed the happiness of an individual and a community (Domenech 448; Mauzi 580). However, to realize the common good, they carelessly dealt with the problem of an individual as the main body of society that could actively participate in everyone's happiness. In this sense, Madame de Staël's concept of virtue was different from the philosophers in the eighteenth century. While she shared various aspects of virtue, she focussed on the inner morality of an individual as a result of his ethical choices. Similarly, De la littérature will emphasize on the interaction of virtue consisting of an author, a work, and its readers.

# II. The Operation of Virtue and the Ethical Progress

Madame de Staël emphasized virtue as a driving force for restoring and renewing the literature in the 1800s that seemed to escape from the chaotic period of the French Revolution because of the political and literary situation at that time. Although Madame de Staël supported the French Revolution and the republicanism established in 1792, she focussed on the Reign of Terror that "destroyed the people, personality, emotion, and thought of France" (DL 298-299). However, instead of frustrating this situation, the author asserted, "it is the nature of a revolution to check, for some years, the progress of mental improvement, and to give it afterwards a new impulsion" (DL 299). She refuted the conventional wisdom about the Middle Ages that was regarded as the Dark Ages. In this context, she argued, "I do not conceive that the human species have retrograded during this epoch, on the contrary it is admitted, that in the course of above ten centuries great efforts have been made in the propagation of knowledge, as well as in the development of the intellectual faculties" (DL 162-163). For Madame de Staël, when barbarians invaded the Roman Empire, that is, when the civilization of northern and southern regions crossed paths, it formed an important inflection point of European history. Immigrants filled with the energy of conquest invaded the Roman Empire. During this period, contemporary Romans regarded the invasion as a great misfortune, but the southern people had become weak and felt energetic by interacting with the northern people, while simultaneously adding their southern mildness to this fusion. The fate of modern literature starts from this point. "The successful fusion" motivating movement in the intellect and civilization of Europe presented a positive

indicator to France suffering from confusion (Lotterie, "L'année 1800-Perfectibilité" 16).

The collision and process of harmony due to the inflow of immigrants transformed confusion into abundance:

That a new social class entered into the French politics will produce the similar result. This revolution may, in the course of time, enlighten a larger proportion of mankind, but for many years vulgarity of manners and opinions, must in many respects cause both taste and reason to become retrograde. (298)

Contrary to royalist writers who blamed the philosophers in the eighteenth century for such a situation in France, Madame de Staël viewed the French situation wherein customs and literature were victimized — from the perspective of philosophical faith about "perfectibility." This is caused by "accidental incidents" (DL 157) where history took a temporary detour, but she assured that linear and consistent progress would be regained.

Apparently, Madame de Staël succeeded the concept of progress inquired by the philosophers in the eighteenth century, but the experience of the French Revolution made her consider a different level of progress, that is ethical progress, than that advocated by them. While the philosophers in the eighteenth century focused on the academic and critical thinking ability that became even more affluent and concrete, for Madame de Staël, progress means more than the progress of intelligence (Lotterie, "L'année 1800-Perfectibilité" 17). Madame de Staël had watched the confusion caused by unrestrained expression of passions, in particular, the terrible disaster of the Reign of Terror. Thus, she had no alternative but to focus on the human feeling from a perspective that was different from that of the writers in the eighteenth century. Accordingly, for her, the progress of civilization was inseparable from the understanding of human beings. As she thought that the French Revolution had deviated due to "immoderate passions," she questioned how man could be free from it, and what literature could do to construct a harmonized progress between freedom and order and create a balance of passions. Therefore, it is not an exaggeration that De la littérature contains her introspection about these questions.

Understanding the kind of human being who is demanded by such times will guarantee the ethical aspect of progress that is drawn in De la littérature. The writer suggested an idealistic work that elevates affection to a sublime level in the minds of readers by stimulating their virtue and boosts their spirits. This practical approach to the literature may seem to be banal at a glance. However, Madame de Staël takes a step further. She explains the dynamic process wherein literary works awaken the inherent virtue inside the readers, who face those works as follows:

Our organs are also acted upon by eloquence, poetry, the incidents of the dramatic scene, the gloom of melancholy thoughts, altho" they are properly, the objects of reason and reflection. It is then that Virtue becomes a voluntary impulse, a movement that communicates itself to the blood, and hurries us irresistibly along like the most violent and imperious passions. (DL 69)

The works containing "the voice of truth" (DL 396) function in our existence triggering movement after passionate "enthusiasm," with its moral beauty permeating our spirit. Since we are seized by enthusiasm, we are inspired, and we are simultaneously compelled to move beyond the state of this inspiration and are filled with enthusiasm. According to Ann Amend, enthusiasm is the dynamic energy that makes us behave and lead intense and developed lives (Amend 270-271).

This energy possessing the power is soft and permanent: it is an honourable power that raises human beings suffering from passions and becoming lethargic witnesses with barren minds. We have all kinds of boiling emotions, such as ambition, conceit, love, etc., and these passions are obstacles to our happiness due to the gap between reality and the ideal — becoming the foundations of our sufferings. However, by concentrating on energy, we can inspire enthusiasm from these deepseated passions. As Kant said, enthusiasm for Madame de Staël is a passion for the moral beauty, and like duty, it is demanded from an individual. Just as we rely on a sacred existence, with enthusiasm we encounter a life with the power that has been cultivated in us. Through enthusiasm, the kinetic energy of virtue, Madame de Staël wanted the morality of an individual to transcend political utilitarianism. For society to restore order and regain stability, the new legislation and political system are not enough. The good will of each social member along with their effort is also required. Each individual has to control their passion and accept the extensive transformation of society and the introduction of new values. When each individual fulfils their duties, they will block the deviation of passions, participate in progress, and have a communal political vision.

# III. The Unity of Morality, Sensibility, and Intelligence

Poetic enthusiasm is a "noble melancholy" and is expressed as "deep and terrible meditations" in the text (DL 238-239), focusing on balanced emotion that neither misses nor overflows. The tension arising from the restraint and harmony of this emotion gives us a feeling of sublimity. As stated by Madame de Staël, "it is not enough to affect the heart, we must enlighten the mind." (DL 352) The emotion of sublimity leads us to the realm beyond the pure ideal, prepares us to face our limitations, and possess the power and courage to transcend.

In that case, what literary works can concretely lead our soul towards virtue and enlightenment? As a work that fits "the current situation," the writer suggests a literature of "sensible philosophy," one with an emotional description and balance between philosophy and analysis, wherein emotion and reason simultaneously operate. These works necessarily deal with all kinds of human passions, such as love, jealousy, revenge, ambition, conceit, and etc. However, as "a certain degree of passion inspires poetry, a degree more destroys it" (DL 355), these emotions have to be regulated by reason. This is because an emotional description followed by a philosophical analysis can provide the appropriate "sentimental education" to regulate the emotional tempo in the current era of passions.

Importantly, the delicate expression of personalities and sentiments of characters guarantee "the plausibility." Madame de Staël sees the possibility in the emerging genre of the novel and emphasizes that a novel appropriately reproduces an individual's situation in the current society. While the writers in the eighteenth century reproduced the reality, regarded the novel with an artistic value to transcend this, and tried to explain the interaction of circumstances between an individual and life in their literary works (Maeder Metcalf: 43), Madame de Staël takes a step further. Based on her understanding of the human heart and emotions, she thinks that revealing the intrinsic cause in the behaviour of characters is a novelist's duty (Lotterie, "Madame de Stael" 23). As she reveals in De l'Allemagne, "the most important thing is to know other, that is, to understand why they have different way of thinking and emotion from me" (DA I 140), the novel prepares us for understanding the other through sympathy.

Of the human emotions, "compassion" and "sympathy" repeatedly appear in De la littérature because these emotions can protect a society from all kinds of terrible disasters involved in political disputes and violence (Fontana 180). As mentioned above, in the foundation of literature as the sensible philosophy that Madame de Staël suggests, the experience of the French Revolution is situated. Compared with the ancient society, an individual of modern society experienced "the suffering from the isolation, the suffering without hope to rely on, and the suffering that nature and society create" (DL 107), and the unprecedented mental shock caused by the French Revolution intensified this mental suffering. Their suffering receives "consolation of salvation" (DL 84) in the literary works. The literature "will elevate their spirit, lead toward the universal meditation, and escape from the thought about the personal suffering" (DL 84), pursuing universal happiness through consolation. This is possible because humankind was developed from the happiness of an individual and family to seeking happiness of the other, nation, and everyone else. Raising the sensibility for virtue becomes mutual happiness and consolation. For Madame de Staël, the aim of thought is to escape from the emotion confined within an individual by elevating one to include the other and to pursue mutual happiness.

However, a question to be settled first for achieving the happiness of a community pursued by Madame de Staël. Incidents occurred that made her feel the necessity to cope with fatalism that reigned over her contemporaries, who say: "if the situation makes present us, we cannot defy the control of the situation" (DA II 92). The misfortunes that ancient people with "dream, foresight, and oracle" could not undo were inexistent, and they could rely on a miracle in certain unfortunate situations. The "supernatural thing" that existed in them enabled them to hold on to hope (DL 106). However, the contemporary man is only left with their free will in this desperate situation. The literature as the mimesis on reality, the inner and external restrains spreading within the human heart, and the harsh situation arising from it will provide us with an opportunity to introspect on our free will. Noticeably, we can only exercise the freedom of selection in an extreme situation, which will eventually boost our soul. If "the ethicality that a novel has exists in emotion that a novel instills" (DA II 47), the novel designed by Madame de Staël is minutely concerned with the happiness of an individual and a community and preferentially aims for the moral completion of each individual. This is because happiness is not the only aim of humanity, which should be to lead the moral ability of the human being to a sustainable completion (Chanal 578).

For Madame de Staël, the novel of the French "republic" had to be regarding a philosophical, sentimental, and simultaneously, social function. Through the novel's delicate portrayal of the personality and emotion of characters, she hoped that it would contribute towards understanding human beings and the relationship between oneself and a community. In addition, she hoped that the novel embraces the emotions of sympathy and affection by evoking an awakening and boosting the heart. Furthermore, she hoped that the novel takes virtue as the target of enthusiasm in republicanism wherein social status and blind religious faith would be abolished, and forms the moral sense of people. The literature that harmonizes morality, sensibility, and intelligence "is valid for the completion of soul" (DA II 47) and can contribute to the progress of literature and humanity.

#### Conclusion

In the early nineteenth century undergoing a rapid change, Madame de Staël wrote De la littérature to diagnose the contemporary literature and open a new possibility for it. Through her work, the writer attempted to send a message to the contemporaries experiencing the deviation of the French Revolution that the recent situation was only "accidental," and humanity would once again walk along the course of progress with the power of literature. For this, while Madame de Staël illustrated how the literature had guaranteed the progress of the civilization, she suggested a necessary literature programme that consolidated the establishment of republicanism. Regarding this, literature regarded as "literature program of republic" emphasized the instillation of ethicality for citizens through literature. She judged that to correct the harmful effect of the French Revolution brought forth by excessive passions, people need to calm their passions, make the ethical choice and restore virtue, which is the inclination towards our intrinsic goodness. For this, Madame de Staël demonstrated that the passion for moral beauty can be delivered by an author to their readers through literary works and thus contribute to the moral completion of an individual. She expected that literature as an appropriate "sentimental education" wherein emotion and reason simultaneously operate — that aims for the consolation and happiness of the entire social community beyond an individual wherein morality, sensibility, and intelligence consist of a Holy Trinity could pursue the happiness of humankind through the completion of the human soul.

Unfortunately, the stability of the republicanism that Madame de Staël aspired for was not realized. A few years after the publication of De la littérature, the dictatorship of Napoleon was established. As questioned by Sainte-Beuve, did her literature programme that was prepared for the stability of republicanism encounter a big failure? We do not think so. The novel's theory suggested by her prepared the theoretical foundation for a new genre of novel that would soon blossom and foretold novels of Honoré de Balzac vividly reproducing their fanatical passions. "The sensible philosophy" put forth by Madame de Staël that existed in the ethical dimension of a human being will be extended into the social dimension by Victor Hugo, and "groupe de Coppet," indirectly participating in the writing of De la littérature by Madame de Staël and significantly influenced the intellectual works of the youth of "generation of 1820."

This nineteenth-century female writer fiercely lived in the upheavals of the

French Revolution and generously shared her "intellectual enthusiasm." She receives attention in the East Asian countries of South Korea and Japan as the writer who remained the inexpungible vestige in the stream of French literature and ideas. The reception history study focussing on the translation of Madame de Staël's works undertaken by South Korea, Japan, and further East Asia as well as research on her works provide an opportunity to explore her works and ideas within the geographical and cultural context of East Asia.

#### Works Cited

- Amend, Ann. "Le système de l'enthousiasme d'après Madame de Staél." Le Groupe de Coppet et l'Europe, 1789-1830. Eds Kurt Kloocke and Simone Balayé. Lausanne-Paris: Institut Benjamin Constant-Jean-Touzt, 1994. 269-290.
- Antoine, Gérald. "Les aventures de la vertu au XVIIIe siècle." Le Bonheur de la littérature. Eds. Christine Montalbetti and Jacques Neefs. Paris: PUF, 2005. 127-141.
- Chanal, Pierre. "Les libéralismes français anti-utilitaristes: G. de Staël, B. Constant et A. de Toqueville." Histoire raisonnée de la philosophie morale et politique. Eds. Alain Caillé, Christian Lazzeri and Michel Senellart. Paris: La Découverte, 2001. 574-582.
- Domech, Jacques. "Rousseau(1712-1778): l'idée d'un peuple heureux." Histoire raisonnée de la philosophie morale et politique. Eds. Alain Caillé, Christian Lazzeri and Michel Senellart. Paris: La Découverte, 2001. 447-455.
- Dornier, Carole. "Vertu." Dictionnaire électronique de Montesquieu. http://dictionnaire-montesquieu. ens-lyon.fr/fr/article/1376475883/fr/
- Fontana, Biancamaria. "Madame de Staël et les passions." Le Groupe de Coppet et la Révolution française. Eds. Etienne Hofmann and Anne-Lise Delacrétaz, Lausanne/Paris: Insitut Benjamin Constant/Jean Touzot, 1988, 175-181.
- Lotterie, Florence. "Chateaubriand contre Staël." Revue des sciences humaines 247 (1997): 9-22.
- -.. "L'année 1800-Perfectibilité, progrès et révolution dans De la littérature de Mme de Staël." Romantisme 108 (2000): 9-22.
- "Madame de Stael. La littérature comme 'philosophie sensible'." Romantisme 124 (2004): 19-30.
- Mauzi, Robert. L'idée du bonheur dans la littérature et la pensée françaises au XVIIIe siècle, Genève, Slatkine, 1979.
- Maeder Metcalf, Beate. "La théorie du roman chez Mme de Staël." Europe 693-594(1987): 38-48.
- Vargas, Yves. "Jean-Jacques Rousseau, la vertu." CNRS. Comité Jean-Jacques Rousseau, Paris IV-Sorbonne, samedi 25 avril, 1998.

# 文学批评: 催化文学与思想的融合

# Literary Criticism: A Catalyst for the Fusion of Literature and Ideas

蒋洪新(Jiang Hongxin)

内容摘要:文学思想是文学与思想的相互契合与交融。通过文学批评,不仅能对文学创作产生自觉或不自觉的影响,还将对文学思想的产生、形成与发展起到"隐性"的规范、制约和驱动作用。文学批评既是一种创造性活动,也是一种目的性活动,也需要注重方法论的创新。推进文学思想的研究,应克服文学批评泛化的现象,弘扬文学的纯粹性和人文性,并更加关注文学作品及其思想。文学思想研究,若不能感受文学创作显示出的思想倾向,不能把握文学主体的思想个性及其审美风格,也就难以准确理解文学思想发展的主潮与大势。

关键词: 文学; 文学思想; 文学批评

作者简介: 蒋洪新,文学博士,湖南师范大学教授,主要从事英美文学研究。本文系国家社科基金重大招标项目"20世纪美国文学思想研究"【项目编号: 14ZDB088】的阶段性成果。

Title: Literary Criticism: A Catalyst for the Fusion of Literature and Ideas

Abstract: Literary thought demonstrates the resonance and interplay between literature and ideas. Literary criticism can not only exert a direct or indirect influence on literary creation, but also imperceptibly normalize, restrain, and drive literary thought in the process of its generation, formation, and development. As a creative activity and purposive activity as well, literary criticism should also lay stress on the innovation of methodology. To promote the research on literary thought, researchers are supposed to overcome the generalization of literary criticism, promote the purity and humanistic nature of literature, and focus more on literary works and thoughts thereof. If researchers fail to apprehend the ideological tendency in literary works and to grasp the ideological uniqueness and aesthetic style of the literary subject, it will be hard for them to make sense of the main tide and momentum of literary thoughts.

**Key words:** Literature; literary thoughts; literary criticism

Author: Jiang Hongxin, Ph.D., is Professor at Foreign Studies College, Hunan

Normal University (Changsha 410081, China). His research mainly focuses on British and American literature (Email: jhxin@hunnu.edu.cn).

文学与思想的关系是新世纪以来我国学术界颇有争议的话题。一方面,"思 想界"认为当代中国文学脱离现实,缺乏思想,看不到对当下中国人生存境 遇、人生意义和终极价值的思考;另一方面,"文学界"则指责这些仅通过"有 限的文学阅读"而轻率得出的判断的评价是片面的。好的文学必然是个体生 命体验与社会语境的综合, 折射的不仅是由各种文学手法构建的艺术世界, 也关联了这个时代、历史和人类命运。因此,在文学作品中行寻幽探微之事, 需对蕴含其中的文学思想进行深入研究。

# 一、文学与文学思想辨析

1、研究文学思想,不可不知何谓文学。

在古代汉语中, "文"有三义: 一谓复杂, "物相杂,故曰文"。二谓 有组织有条理, "五色成文而不乱"。三谓美丽, "会集众彩以成锦绣,会 集众字以成辞义"。文之涵义如此,文学之定义亦有不同。狭义的文学,专 指"美的文学",是优美艺术的一种。所谓美的文学者,论内容,则情感丰富, 而或不必合义理: 论形式,则音韵铿锵,而或出于整比,可以被弦诵,可以 动欣赏。广义的文学,则指六朝以来的文学。"文学"二字,始见《论语》"博 学于文",文指《诗》《书》六艺而言,各家各派之言也称之文学。钱基博则言, 所谓文学者, "用以会通众心,互纳群想,而兼发智情;其中有重于发智者 如论辨、序跋、传记等是也,而智中含情:有重于抒情者,如诗歌、戏曲、 小说等是也"(2-3)。根据《现代汉语词典》释义,文学指以语言为手段塑 造形象来反映社会生活、表达作者思想感情的一种艺术,通常分为诗歌、小说、 散文、戏剧四大类别。

在西方文化语境中,文学是任何一种书面作品,被认为是一种艺术形式, 或者任何一种被认为具有艺术或智力价值的作品。它的拉丁词根 Litterura (源 自 littera 字母或书写)被用来指代所有的书面描述,尽管现代的定义扩展 了这个术语,包括口头或口头的文本(口头文学)。这个概念随着时间的推移 而改变了意义: 现在它已扩展为非文字的语言艺术形式。根据体裁来分类, 文学可以划分为小说还是非小说,是诗歌还是散文。它还可以根据小说、短 篇小说或戏剧等主要形式来进一步加以区分;通常也可以根据历史时期或它 们的某些美学特征或流派的不同而分类。

可见,不同时代有不同的文学定义,文学概念往往随着文学本身的发展 变化而不断变化。在中国文学史上,文史哲往往是不分家的,那些有着很高 文学价值的哲学与历史著作,均可归入文学的范畴,如《庄子》《史记》等, 有的文学理论本身就以文学作品的形式被广泛承认,如《文赋》《文心雕龙》

等,还有的则可能要在经历漫长的历史选择之后,才被公认为是一种文学形 式,如明清小说等。而在西方文学界,文学的内容与语言往往是分开来研究的, 尤其是进入19世纪后,由于语言学的兴起和发展,文学被看作是一种独立的 语言艺术,尤其是受到后来的分析哲学影响,文学更是呈现出了语言学研究 的片面趋势。那么, 究竟依据什么来判定"什么是文学"或者"哪些作品可 列入文学范围"呢?按照 Lena Rydholm 的看法,文学或文字作品是否属于文 学范围是由某社会、文化、经济、宗教环境中某人或某一派人在某一个时间 地点凭他们的总体价值观点来判断(322)。用总体价值观来判断文学性的 有无,这也符合我国历代主流文学理论家们强调作品思想性的传统。

## 2、一般意义上的思想及思想史。

关于思想的定义, 《现代汉语词典》和《辞海》有诸种解释, 总体而言, 偏重于思想的外延解释,而对于其内涵仅停留于"引用性"的解释,缺乏对思 想自身的思索和深层追问。如所谓"思想即理性认识",皆引用"理性认识与 感性认识的关系"来进行解释,并仅将其表述为"正确的思想来自于社会实践, 是经过由实践到认识,由认识到实践的多次反复而形成的"。显然,这样的理 解过于简单了。钱穆先生《中国思想史》对思想与思想史作过一番精彩论述: "佛经上说:有生灭心,有相续心。普通人心都是刹那起灭,一刻儿想这,一 刻儿想那。很少能专注一对象,一问题,连续想下。相续心便成了思想。有些 人能对一事实一问题,穷年累月,不断注意思索,甚至有毕生殚精竭虑在某一 问题上的,这些便成为思想家。但宇宙间,人生界,有几件大事,几个大问题, 虽经一两个人穷老思索,也获不到结论,于是后人沿他思路,继续扩大继续深 入,如是般想去,便成为思想史。有些注意这问题,有些注意那问题,有些注 意问题之这一面,有些注意问题之那一面。注意对象不同,思路分歧,所得结 果也不一致,这就形成思想史上的许多派别"(1)。

其实,思想与哲学是有所区别的。哲学是不以普通人的思想为研究对象的, 因此哲学史必须是哲学家的哲学史,也就是以哲学家的思想或哲学流派为顺序, 以体现历时的哲学思想的变迁。思想不一样,人人都有思有想,而且形成思想 的话语、结构和体系都不一样,因此,思想史并不一定就是思想家的历史,也 不以某个思想家和思想流派为顺序。葛兆光先生指出,应该在一般意义上来理 解思想及思想史,即"一般知识、思想与信仰的历史"。这里的"一般知识与 思想",是指的最普遍的、也能被有一定知识的人所接受、掌握和使用的对字 宙间现象与事物的解释,这不是天才智慧的萌发,也不是深思熟虑的结果,当 然也不是最底层的无知识人的所谓"集体意识",而是一种"日用而不知"的 普遍知识和思想,作为一种普遍认可的知识与思想,这些知识与思想通过最基 本的教育构成人们的文化底色,它一方面背靠人们一些不言而喻的依据和假设, 建立起一整套简明、有效的理解,一方面在口常生活世界中对一切现象进行解 释,支持人们的操作,并作为人们生活的规则和理由(葛兆光34)。

如果把这个"一般思想"置于学术传统的视野之下,那么另一个有意思 的话题也就进入了我们的视野,即"学术"与"思想"的关系。本文无意对 这两个概念的历史分野进行深入的研究,这里只想说明,当代学界似乎有将 学术与思想割裂来看的倾向,如果抛开所谓的专业偏好和情感立场,其实两 者的差异鸿沟并不一定那么清晰。我也同意葛兆光先生的态度, 要将思想史 与学术史打通,正确看待和处理知识(knowledge)与思想(intellectual 或 thought 或 idea)的关系。简言之,我们要在历史过程中,从学术发展的知识 背景以及支持思想的合理性和有效性的话语出发,来表述人们所掌握的有关 宇宙与社会的知识或智慧。

#### 3、文学思想的内涵和生成机理

将文学与思想两个关键词勾连起来, 而不是简单组合而成, 这是对理解 文学思想的基本态度。文学思想不是文学与思想的简单相加,而是文学与思 想的内在相互契合和交融。正如安德烈•纪德评论陀思妥耶夫斯基时说的那样: "如果他不是一个小说家,而是一个哲学家的话,他可能会更有条理地把自 己的思想理顺,但那样一来,我们就会失去最好的东西了"(44)。纪德认 为陀思妥耶夫斯基是一个了不起的思想家、哲学家,可是这种哲学毕竟不是 从概念上来的,而是在他的文学中呈现出来的。

"文学思想"有两种基本指涉。一指"文学作品中"的思想,即文学作 品是文学家观念和思想的直观呈现,如沃侬·路易·帕灵顿(Vernon Louis Parrington)对美国清教主义、自由主义等的论述;二指"关于文学"的思想, 是指在历史发展的各个阶段中, 具有较广泛的影响, 或在当时影响甚微、而 在文学思想发展史上对后世却具有较大影响, 对学科的发展具有重要意义的 文学观念和文学思想意识, 包括文学批评和文学创作两方面在内。此外, 文 学思想也可能是"与文学相关的思想",一般而言,文学总是与一定的社会 文化思潮和哲学思想的兴替紧密联系在一起的, 具有较鲜明的文学价值选择 倾向, 并且常常给当时的文学创作以直接或间接的深刻影响。所谓文学思想 史,则是对各个历史时期文学思想和观念意识的史的发展考察和论述(敏泽, 《关于中国文学思想史问题》5-9)。

文学是人类社会中重要的文化活动和文化现象。文学思想主要体现在对 于文学的理性思考上,集中体现在对于文学的本质、使命、价值、内涵等重 大问题的思考和言说上。除了体现出文学主体对于文学自身构成和发展现状 的认识,文学思想也反映一个社会特定时期的政治、经济、文化等各个方面 的情形,而且深受后者的影响。因为某一具体文学思想的提出和演变,都有 当时的文学创作和文学思潮作为背景,离开具体的历史文化语境,其思想就 会成为无源之水、无本之木。

敏泽在《中国文学思想史》一书中指出: "文学本体之实践与运动所折 射出的文学观是间接的文学思想;而对文学主体的批评所反映的文学观则是 直接的文学思想。从文学思想的生长而言,间接的文学思想固然在前而直接 的文学思想在后, 但是一旦文学创作成为无意有意的主体活动且成为批评的 对象时,文学思想间接和直接的反映就汇合在一起,它们相辅相成、相互依靠, 相互发明,相互砥砺,有时泾渭分明,有时却又融汇混茫,汩汩滔滔一往无前, 形成具有鲜明的民族审美特色的文学思想洪流"(8)。

敏泽先生从"文学思想"的生长机理出发,将文学观分发间接的文学思 想和直接的文学思想,而且在时间逻辑上将间接的文学放在直接的文学之前, 在内容逻辑上将两者视作相辅相成的统一体。实际上,这里谈到了文学思想 生成的两个机理:即所谓"间接机理"和"直接系统"。前者侧重从文学创 作即文学本体之实践与运动出发,是由文学作品生成的文学思想;后者则侧 重从文学批评即对文学主体的批评而呈现的文学思想。一旦将这两者汇合, 就能对文学思想的产生、形成与发展起着"隐性"的规范、制约和驱动作用, 而促使这两个不同的机理发生积极互动与协同共振效用的是"文学批评"。 文学批评并不仅仅代表批评家的艺术观和价值观,它实质上是一个民族在特 定的时代条件下对文学价值、功能意义、发展走势的一种社会判断和审视。

## 二、作为文学思想研究一般方法的文学批评

作为文学思想研究的专门术语,文学批评一词是"五四"时期从西方译 介过来的。在广义上说来,批评就是"判断"或"裁定"的意思。英国批评 家德莱顿认为: "批评最先由亚里士多德确立的,它的意思是指作出正确判 断所使用的标准。"德莱顿使"文学批评这个术语在中意义明确并逐渐为较 多的人使用"(韦勒克 35)。我国学界多用"文学评论",古代也使用过"批 评"的概念。如明万历年间刊刻的《新刻按鉴全像批评三国志传》、《钟伯 敬先生批评水浒传》等。文学批评作为学科是以一定的文学观念、文学理论 以及文学欣赏为基础,以各种具体的文学现象(包括文学创作、文学接受和 文学批评对象,而以具体的文学作品为主)为对象的评价和研究活动。

其一,文学批评是一种创造性活动。批评家应该是这个时代的文学或者 说文化的创造性力量之一,他通过他的批评行为,本身也在探索这个时代的 文学,这个时代的言说和书写怎么样,创造性潜力在哪里,这才是批评家真 正应该做的,也是对批评家真正的考验(李敬泽)。批评家对当代作家、作 品的批评阐释,不能停留在对既有理论概念的套用和检验,也不能满足于通 俗易懂的感性鉴赏,更紧迫也更为重要的其实是通过批评来完成思想生产和 理论建构。从事文学批评活动、首先意味着对批评对象进行选择、然后是发 掘或揭示批评对象的内在价值。如是只是提示或发掘仍然是不够的,还需要 建立与作家与作品及其文学世界的连接,并且充分表现批评主体独特的审美 理想、审美观念和审美态度。有了这种创造意识,批评主体就不仅是作家的 知音而且是与作家并列于文学世界中的另一种意义的作家。此外,文学批评 还必须在联系政治、经济、文化等意识形态的基础上摆脱成为它们附庸的重 负:必须在联系文学创作、文学理论的同时也改变成为它们附庸的地位,而 应该使批评回到批评自身的本体位置中来,使批评真正成为批评,成为"文学" 的批评(刘红红41-42)。

其二,文学批评是一种目的性活动。文学贵在思想创造,文学批评也难 在有所创见。文学批评是一种创造性转换的文学活动,它不是对主体情感体 验的简单记录,而是需要从感觉的范围转到思想的范围,实现从文学到思想 的飞跃。如果说主体的情感体验只是从内部加以知觉,使主体获得对现实生 活的情感认识,那么批评则需要从内部和外部两个向度加以考量,在体验和 观点的基础上对批判对象作出综合判断。这时判断意味着文学批评应在对文 学作品及现象的感受中探寻和揭示这些现象内所蕴涵的普遍规律和真理(刘 红红 41-42)。在发掘和研究文学现象与规律之关系的工作中,仅凭批评者个 人的喜好与情感偏向还远远不够,批评还有一个严肃的目标,这就是"发扬 和净化他的大多数读者的口味"。车尔尼雪夫斯基指出:"批评是对一种文 学作品优缺点的评论。批评的使命在于表达优秀读者的意见, 促进这种意见 在人群中继续传布"(164)。与此相关联,在表达方式上,文学批评应尽可 能明确、坦率,不能含含糊糊、吞吞吐吐,这样才能符合批评家理性思维的 轨迹,完成批评所应担负的公正态度、鲜明观点、客观评价的任务。只有这样, 才符合文学本身的利益。

其三, 文学批评的方法论要义。进入新的世纪以来, 文学批评对方法论 的探索热情逐渐高涨,批评家自觉的批评意识与某种或数种学科方法或学术 思潮相结合,产生了如精神分析批评、原型批评、结构主义批评、现象学批评、 读者反应批评等多种形态和流派,显示了文学批评寻求秩序和建立系统的一 种愿望。我们认为,文学思想与文学批评的思想并不是直接对应的关系,"文 学批评追求的思想性不完全等同于文学作品的思想性。杰出作品的思想性不 是可以概括的主题思想,而是流淌在文本内部的叙述性思想,是弥散而丰富的" (唐诗人、蒋述卓 5-15)。如果要要从文学作品中获得原创性思想,必然要 求选择带有原创性思想、具备思潮开创性的批评方法。建立在新的哲学观念 以及语言学、社会学、人类学、心理学乃至自然科学理论基础上的新的批评 方法的引入,为拓展批评家的思维领域,丰富和完善批评手段,从而推动整 个文学批评的发展,起到了积极的作用。当然,也要避免那种"虚假批评", 不能盲目追逐西方的文学理论,诸如后殖民主义、第三世界话语等等,不仅 离我国的文学实际很遥远,甚至使用者对这些理论本身的理解也往往似是而 非,不知所云,这对于文学和文学思想的发展就很有害了。

#### 三、推进文学思想研究的现实考量

一个时代有一个时代的文学,一个时代有一个时代的思想。尽管我们也

不否认,文学是作家精神个体的彰显与个体的表达,是作家个体有意识的、 独创性的和私人化的一面,但就整体而言,文学更应该是人类学的一种回归, 应当从文学作品中解读出某种"精神结构和文化内涵"(陶东风23),其至 是具有普遍时代意义的、超越个性的共同体意识。在特定时代的思想前沿上, 文学总是能够提出、回应并表达生活中那些内在的、重大的和切身的问题, 也生成了这个时代最敏锐、最深邃和最重要的思想。

第一,克服文学批评泛化。韦勒克曾宣称: "二十世纪是批评的世纪"。 综观二十世纪我国的文学界,也曾有一大批谙熟而博通中西文化的大家,他 们隐默淡泊、自觉自砺,从多元、多维、多向度的比较研究视野中,不仅先 知先觉地警醒到自身民族传统文学的亮色,更倾心于建构有着深厚而丰富中 国文学思想内涵。但是, 进入新的世纪后, 文学创作走向多元化和市场化, 且整体创作质量不尽如人意。而文学批评较文学更早地从自家阵地逃之夭夭 了,转而对大众流行文化进行附和,逐渐趋于商业化、新闻化和广告化。对 此有批评家断言,"批评抛下文学享清福去了"(南帆)。特别是在大众传 媒的操纵下,文学批评意识的缺席被方兴未艾的文化批评所占据。诚然,文 化批评有其合理性和存在的意义,但却远离了文学,缺失了对文学的感知、 审美体验, 丢弃了对文学恰到精微处的意义阐释, 并丧失其文学原创性的价 值评判。只有通过加强文学思想的研究,才可能为文学批评找回失去的灵魂 和生存根基,重拾对文学的价值判断。

第二, 弘扬文学的人文性。现代社会的发展趋势之一是分工的精细化, 现代文学同样是往类型化的方向发展。注重艺术性的纯文学,注重商业性和 娱乐性的大众文学,两者之间的分野渐趋明显。纯文学被认为是高级的、真 正的、通往永恒的文学, 而通俗文学则被认为是追逐利益、沉迷当下、意义 不大的文学。人们可能会意识到这种区别,但问题是,两者之间的界限在哪里, 有没有互相转化的可能? 我们既不能陷入"为文学而文学", 躲到象牙塔里 自言自语,自说自话,也不能"离社会越来越近了,但离文学越来越远了"。 我们应时刻保持对文学的"谄媚""异化""缺席""失语"现象的警惕, 坚持文学的自律性和主体性,确立以美为中心、以艺术为中心的批评意识, 捍卫文学或文学批判的尊严。加强文学思想研究, 既要倡导以文学为本位, 反对将文学工具化、商业化、同时又要防止走向封闭、变成自娱自乐的游戏。 通过文学思想的历史性叙述和自我审视,可以在纯文学与大众文学之间找到 一个平衡的度,也就是为文学找到恰当边界。换句话说,文学就其本性而言, 不应该拒绝、排斥现实,而应该关注、包容现实,甚至延伸更到更广泛和更 深刻的内容,比如文化、人性和思想,去拥抱每一个生命个体、直面每一个 脆弱而有限的生命,胸怀全人类。

第三,更加关注文学作品及其思想。关注文学的首要意涵是关注文学作 品及思想本身。莫言在采访时说: "中国当代文学并不逊色于其他国家的同 时代作品,这是毫无疑问的。其实,我倒更想谈谈'莫言热'这个问题。我 就希望大家把对我的热爱变成对中国当代文学的热情,把对我的作品的关注 普及到中国当代文学上,把对我个人的关注普及到所有的作家身上。"(李舫) 文学之所以为文学,就在于它的语言建构,这种语言建构需要昭示和蕴含一 定的内涵。单纯就文学作品的意义而言,"文学作品是它的文学特性、想象 和语言三者的结合,不仅涉及到它的语法结构和逻辑结构,而且也涉及到对 它的联想"(朱立元95)。正是由于联想的存在,使得文学作品在不同阅读 主体的阅读过程中,唤起了不同的意义。由于不同主体本身所具有的知识结构、 所处的时代背景、所获得的生命体验存在差异, 也使得文学作品的意义更加 丰富。正如瑞恰兹说的那样: "一首诗,它在适当的读者的心灵中所构成的 真实的经验,约束着他对于世界的反应,并且整理他的冲动,乃是我们研究 他人对于事物如何感觉的最好的证据"(瑞恰兹29)。文学不能离开它善感、 敏锐、柔软的出发点,不能失去对广阔的社会、人生的判断,不能在文学第 一现场缺席,否则就将只剩下一个躯壳,并终将被时代的浪潮推到边缘。

总的来说,无论是外部的现实状况,还是文学思想的内涵,在新的历史 时期都在发生积极深刻的变化。一种新的文学理论的建立,不能是单靠文学 创作所能办到的, 也不能是单靠对文学的思想状况进行反思就能办到的, 而 应该通过文学批评将文学创作与主体批评连接起来,使得文学在走向思想前 沿的同时也回到其自身。文学批评既是一种自主自觉审美活动,也是文学主 体实现自我主体性的创造活动。我们的文学思想研究,若不能感受文学创作 显示出的思想倾向,不能把握文学主体的思想个性及其审美风格,也就难以 准确理解文学思想发展的主潮与大势。

#### **Works Cited**

车尔尼雪夫斯基: "论批评中的坦率精神",《车尔尼雪夫斯基论文学(中)》。上海:上海 译文出版社,1979年。

[Chernyshevsky, Nikolai. "On the Frank Spirit in Literary Criticism." Chernyshevsky's Views on Literature (2 Vol) . Shanghai: Shanghai Translation Publishing House, 1979.]

葛兆光:《中国思想史 — 导论:思想史的写法》。上海:复旦大学出版社,2004年。

[Ge, Zhaoguang. An Intellectual History of China—Introduction to the Writing of Intellectual History. Shanghai: Fudan UP, 2004.]

安德烈•纪德:《关于陀思妥耶夫斯基的六次讲座》。余中先译。北京:人民文学出版社,2019年。 [Gide, André. Dostoievski. Trans. Yu Zhongxian. Beijing: People's Literature Publishing House, 2019.] 李舫: "莫言:希望把对我的关注变成对当代文学的热情",《人民日报》(2012年10月19日)。 [Li, Fang. "Mo Yan: Hoping Public Interest in Me Will Change into the Passion for Contemporary Literature ". People's Daily 19 October 2012.]

李敬泽: "实录:李敬泽从批评家的角度谈文学",《新浪读书》(2012-10-31)。

http://book.sina.com.cn/news/a/2012-10-31/1633355354.shtml

[Li, Jingze. "Record: Li Jingze Talks about Literature from the Point of View of Critic." Sina Reading, 2012-10-31.]

刘红红:"文学批评的学科定位——对'文学批评是一门现代学科'的认识",《内蒙古电大学刊》 11 (2008): 41-42.

[Liu, Honghong. "The Disciplinary Orientation of Literary Criticism—An Understanding of 'Literary Criticism as a Modern Discipline'." Journal of Inner Mongolia Radio&TV University 11 (2008): 41-42.]

敏泽: "关于中国文学思想史问题",《三峡大学学报(人文社会科学版)》6(2002): 5-9,19。

[Min, Ze. "About the History of Chinese Literature Thinking." Journal of China Three Gorges *University*(*Humanities & Social Sciences*) 6 (2002): 5-9, 19.]

---:《中国文学思想史》。长沙:湖南教育出版社,2004年。

[—. A History of Chinese Literary Thoughts. Changsha: Hunan Education Publishing House, 2004.]

南帆: "批评抛下文学享清福去了",《中华读书报》(2003年03月12日)。

[Nan, Fan. "Criticism's Absence from Literature". China Reading Weekly, 12 March 2003.]

钱基博: 《中国文学史》。北京: 中华书局, 1993年。

[Qian, Jibo. A History of Chinese Literature. Beijing: Zhonghua Book Company, 1993.]

钱穆:《中国思想史》。台北:台湾学生书局,1988年。

[Qian, Mu. China Intellectual History. Taipei: Taiwan Student Book Company, 1988.]

Lena Rydholm: "重新思考中国文学概念与文学文体概念",《文化与诗学》1(2011): 320-

[Rydholm, Lena. "Reconsideration on the Concept of Chinese Literature and of Literary Style." Culture and Poetics 1 (2011): 320-339.]

唐诗人、蒋述卓: "文学批评与思想生成——建构一种广阔的文化诗学理论",《文艺研究》4 (2019): 5-15°

[Tang, Shiren, Jiang Shuzhuo. "Literary Criticism and Thoughts Generation—Constructing a Broad Theory of Cultural Poetics." *Literature & Art Studies* 4 (2019):5-15.]

陶东风:《文体演变及其文化意味》。昆明:云南人民出版社,1994年。

[Tao, Dongfeng. The Evolution of Literary Style and its Cultural Connotations. Kunming: Yunnan People's Publishing House, 1994.]

勒内•韦勒克: 《批评的诸种概念》。丁泓等译。成都: 四川文艺出版社, 1988年。

[Wellek, René. Concepts of Criticism. Trans. Ding Hong etc. Chengdu: Sichuan Literature and Art Publishing House, 1988.]

徐葆耕编:《瑞恰兹:科学与诗》。北京:清华大学出版社,2003年。

[Xu, Baogeng, ed. I.A. Richards: Science and Poetry. Beijing: Tsinghua UP, 2003.]

朱立元:《当代西方文艺理论》。上海:华东师范大学出版社,2005年。

[Zhu, Liyuan. Contemporary Western Literary Theories. Shanghai: East China Normal UP, 2005.]

# 本雅明论波德莱尔:福柯的伦理谱系学解读 Benjamin's Reading on Baudelaire: From Foucauldian Genealogy of Ethics

杜玉生(Du Yusheng)

内容摘要:在1984年去世前夕出版的《性史》第二卷《快感的运用》中,福柯转向了对伦理问题的谱系探查,并明确指出:为了建构一种伦理的谱系学,我们需要特别注意本雅明关于波德莱尔的论述。本文借助福柯提出的伦理谱系学的四重框架(伦理实体、伦理实践、屈从化模式和伦理目的),试图对本雅明关于波德莱尔的阅读及其巴黎拱廊街计划加以阐释,认为在本雅明的论述中,波德莱尔的艺术创作体现为一种典型的自我"品性塑造"的伦理学,其伦理实体表现为欲望的匮乏,伦理实践表现为浪荡子的修行,屈从化化模式表现为忧郁与愤怒,伦理目标是塑造熔真理与体验于一体的伦理一诗学。这种艺术生活最终是为了在当前社会创造一种关涉"生存方式"的伦理艺术。波德莱尔的伦理艺术是一种典型的文学伦理学批评实践,其伦理选择在于文学教诲主体身份的建构和英雄主义的抗争,目的是发挥文学创作的社会批判和伦理教诲功能。

关键词:福柯;本雅明;波德莱尔;伦理谱系;生活艺术

作者简介: 杜玉生, 南京信息工程大学文学院副教授, 上海交通大学外国语学院博士后, 主要研究领域为西方文论与文化、叙事学与比较文学。本文为第12批中国博士后科学基金特别资助项目"米歇尔·福柯伦理思想的现代性研究"【项目编号: 2019T120333】、第63批中国博士后科学基金面上资助一等资助项目"福柯晚期伦理思想研究"【项目编号: 2018M630430】的阶段性成果。

**Title:** Benjamin's Reading on Baudelaire: From Foucauldian Genealogy of Ethics **Abstract:** In *The Use of Pleasure*, the second volume of *The History of Sexuality* published in 1984, Michel Foucault turns to the study of the genealogy of ethics, suggesting that it is possible to read Walter Benjamin's work on Baudelaire as a contribution. With the lens of the four elements of Foucauldian ethics (ethical substance, ethical practice, mode of subjectivation and telos), this article attempts to excavate Benjamin's writings on Baudelaire and the Paris arcades. It indicates that Baudelaire's artistic work is a typical self "ēthopoiēsis" in Benjamin's reading:

The ethical substance is the lack of desire, the ethical practice is the asceticism of dandyism, the mode of subjectivation is the melancholy and anger, and the telos is to create an ethic-poetic life that integrates truth and experience, which is ultimately to create an ethical art related to the way of living in the current society. Baudelaire's ethical art is a typical practice of ethical literary criticism, whose ethical choice lies in the construction of the literary didactic subject and the struggle of heroism, with the purpose of exerting the social criticism and ethical didactic function of literary work.

Key words: Foucault; Benjamin; Baudelaire; genealogy of ethics; art of living Author: Du Yusheng, is Associate professor at College of Liberal Arts in Nanjing University of Information Science & Technology (Nanjing 210044, China) and a Post-doctor at School of Foreign Languages in Shanghai Jiao Tong University (Shanghai 200240, China). His research interests include Western Literary Theory, Narratology and Comparative Literature Studies (Email: Duyusheng5151@126. com).

1983 年, 福柯(Foucault) 在接受访谈时指出: "让我印象深刻的是这 样一个事实,在我们这个社会,艺术仅仅与物相关而与个人或生活无关。它 是由艺术家一类的专业人士制作的特殊之物。但是个人的生活就不能成为一 件艺术品吗?为什么一盏灯、一幢房子可以是艺术品,而我们的生活却不 是?"(福柯156)为此,福柯晚期转向探索一种"自我关注的伦理学",指 出 "在与自我的关系中……存在着对政治权力的抵抗" (The Hermeneutics of the Subject 252)。在《性史》二、三卷《快感的运用》和《自我的关注》及 1980年代法兰西学院课程讲座中,福柯通过对古希腊、希腊化罗马及早期基 督教以"自我技术"和"关心自己"为鹄的的"生存美学"的考察,试图在 现代性中重新激活一种生活的艺术。福柯一方面指出,自布克哈特关于意大 利文艺复兴的研究以来,对生活艺术的历史考察渐渐湮没不闻了,但另一方 面他又注意到,如果我们细审本雅明关于波德莱尔的论述,就有可能重新发 现关于"生活的艺术"的现代伦理谱系(The Use of Pleasure 11)。如果遵从 福柯的建议,我们会发现本雅明对波德莱尔的阐释也具有相似的"问题化框架" (problematic): 即从伦理视角而非知识论或审美标准考察一种赋予生活以风 格的历史。

本雅明(Benjamin)对政治的审美化持批判态度,认为这会导致法西斯 主义, "法西斯主义合乎逻辑的结果是把美学引入政治, ……所有诉诸政治 审美化的努力最终会在战争中达到高潮"(Illuminations 241);并且本雅明 多次指出艺术与生活之间的裂隙不断增长(Walter Benjamin: Selected Writings 237-47)。由此看来,福柯的上述建议不免令人费解。那么,该如何理解福

柯的转向及其"自我关注的伦理学"?本文的目标是参照福柯关于伦理谱系 学的阐释,从本雅明对波德莱尔的论述中梳理出一种独特的伦理视角:本雅 明力图对资本主义的历史进步论观念加以驳斥,同时借助陷入沉睡的"大众 意识"的觉醒克服法西斯资本主义的梦魇。本雅明认为在这样的诉求下,有 可能培养一种更为私人的个体修行技术和自我塑造实践,这种修行技术与自 我实践本质上是伦理和政治的。当然,笔者的目的并非重建一种本雅明式的 伦理学说或主体性理论,而是以另一种方式验证伦理学理论与文学批评实践 的结合,间接论证中国学者提出的文学伦理学批评的道德面向,正如杨革新 指出的: "文学伦理学批评借助自己的学术话语把道德批评从一种范畴中解 放出来, 使道德批评借助文学伦理学批评获得新生"(4)。本文借助福柯伦 理谱系学的四重框架(伦理实体、伦理实践、屈从化模式和伦理目的)解读 本雅明对波德莱尔的阐释,试图阐明本雅明的著作在何种程度上、以何种方 式能够对福柯的伦理谱系学计划进行检验、扩展、补充甚至挑战,这样的一 种伦理谱系学能够创造一种关于现时当下崭新的、具有转变性的文学伦理学 批评实践。

## 一、福柯式的伦理学:超越普遍性的自我伦理

众所周知,福柯的整体理论探讨可分为三个主要领域:对知识的各种体 系、对权力的各种形式和对自我与其自身关系的分析。在这三个领域中,福 柯分别采取极具针对性的分析方法,他分别称之为考古学、谱系学和伦理学, 也就是学界普遍认可的福柯理论之知识考古学、权力谱系学和自我伦理学三 阶段说(During 7)。伦理学是福柯理论分析的第三个轴线,这一概念在《性 史》第二卷《快感的运用》、第三卷《自我的关注》、福柯去世至今仍未发 表的第四卷《肉体的忏悔》以及收录于《福柯文选》的《论伦理学的谱系学: 研究进展一览》等文章中均有详述。

福柯晚期转向主体伦理概念,明确指出他二十年间的研究主题不是权力 而是主体,"我的工作就是分析将人变成主体的三种客体化模式……这样, 我研究的总的主题,不是权力,而是主体"(107-08)。本雅明明确反对主 体概念,诚如阿多诺(Adorno)所言,其理论目标"不是所谓的过度膨胀的 主体主义,而是主观维度概念本身;在他哲学的两极——神话和调节之间, 主体消逝了"(234-35)。本雅明的政治趣味在于"激发"一种新的"集体 身体"(Walter Benjamin: Selected Writings 217-18),这与福柯揭示体验、理 性和主体性当前界限的批判事业关联不大,而是更多地倾向超越主体的后黑 格尔式思辨哲学,目的是创造一种崭新的完全无主体的奇异体验。也就是说, 本雅明力图从体验、知识和真理概念中祛除主体,因此很难想象这样一种关 于体验、知识和真理的"后主体理论"(Pensky 61)如何包孕着伦理面向。

但是,根据本雅明,只有当认识到什么已经失去的那一刻,革命的潜力

才能实现, "它唯有作为在能被人认识到的瞬间闪现出来,而又一去不复返 的意象才能被捕获"(Illuminations 255)。革命性的书写必须通过对已丧失 之物的分析才能进行,本雅明指出现代性已丧失之物正是现代主体将自己的 生活素材以一种独特而有用的方式加工成艺术品的能力, "难道他的工作不 正是要把他本人或别人的生活的原材料加工成某种结实、有用、独特的样子 吗?"(《本雅明文选》329)如果主体概念最终不得不被抛弃,那么首先需 要解决的是要认识到这一需要被抛弃的主体到底是什么。于本雅明而言,主 体性必须摧毁自身,但这一摧毁的过程需要在对主体本身的认知中才能展开, 才能取得成效。尽管本雅明对主体概念持有敌意,但他在摧毁主体概念的同 时依然需要对这一概念有所把握,即便这是在幕后进行的工作,"从意识里 摒除出去的东西却必然以更不可抵御的力量在潜意识里向他呈现出来"(《发 达资本主义时代的抒情诗人:论波德莱尔》6)。鉴于此,本雅明的立场一定 程度上与福柯的主张不谋而合,"拒绝在哲学上求助一个构成性主体,这并 不等同于认为主体没有存在过,并不意味着为了纯客观性而对主体加以抽象" (Foucault, Aesthetics, Method, and Epistemology 462)。那福柯的伦理谱系学 指向的是怎样一种主体概念呢?

在福柯的作品中,伦理学指关于自我与其自身之关系(rapport á soi)的 研究。福柯将伦理学作为道德研究的一个部分。除伦理以外,道德还包括人 们的实际行为,也就是他们与道德相关的举动,以及加诸他们身上的道德符 码或法规。借助道德符码,福柯理解了譬如决定哪些行为属被严禁、被允许 或被要求的那些法则,理解了符码为不同的可能行为指定不同的积极价值和 消极价值的一面。对人们实际的道德行为进行研究是道德社会学的一个常规 领域,而道德哲学家也无一例外地埋头于精心制定一套合理的道德符码并为 其结构辩护。福柯想做的是将研究的中心转移至"个人应该如何把自己建构 为自己行为的道德主体"(福柯 159),福柯称之为"自我关注"或"关心自 己"(epimēleia heautou)的伦理学。

作为自我与其自身关系之研究的伦理学包括四个轴心或四重框架。首先, 伦理实体(substance ethique),即个体必须将自己建构成其道德行为的那一 部分,或"自我或者自我行为的哪个部分与道德行为相关"(159)。伦理判 断是否应该应用于情感、意图或欲望呢?我们的哪一部分应该被当作伦理实 体呢?福柯认为,现代范畴的伦理实体与希腊一罗马世界和基督教的伦理实 体极为不同——福柯在《快感的运用》中对之作了具体分析与论述(The Use of Pleasure 33-78)。概言之,我们的伦理实体将决定在建构道德符码时应将 自身哪一部分考虑在内。其次,伦理实践(ethical work),这涉及到我们改 变或规划自己以成为伦理主体的手段,涉及到我们自我形成的行为或自我实 践、技术(practique de soi)或广义的"禁欲(修行)主义"(asceticism)。 譬如,基督徒的伦理实践是以一种自我解释学形式存在的自我检查,以及由

此产生的一整套技术。这些技术有助于将我们变成能按伦理行事的存在,或 有助于我们通过一定的方式改变自我(福柯 162-63)。第三,屈从化或主体 化的模式 (mode d'assujettissement), 这涉及到"人们被吁请或者被激励去发 现自身道德义务的方式"(160)。我们也许将道德义务认为是神圣的戒律所 揭示的,也可能认为它是理性的要求,或来自于习俗惯例,或者认为它是脱 胎于"给你的存在以最美的形式"(160)这样一种企图。福柯想揭示的是, 不同的人及不同的历史阶段可能以不同的方式服从于同样的法则。屈从化的 模式提供了道德符码与自我之间的连接,决定这一符码如何控制我们自身。 第四,目的(teleologie),是我们在按道德规范行事时渴望成为的那种存在。 譬如,我们是否应该成为"纯粹的,或者是不朽的,或者自由的,或者是变 成我们自我的人,等等?"(163)在介绍其自我塑造实践的观点时,福柯谈 到了瓦尔特·本雅明论波德莱尔的巨著。从本雅明分析的浪荡子(dandies) 的形象中,我们发现了一种使自己的存在具有风格或把身体和生活变成艺术 品的都市实践。我们因而发现了一种自我的实践,也就是福柯所说的一种伦 理。就像在古代伦理学中一样,它不是一个人的责任规定或禁止某些行为的 问题, 而是有关赋予行动以风格以求成为一种美的存在——一种独立于宗教 和国家之外的"品性塑造(ēthopoiēsis)"或"伦理诗学"(ethic-poetic)(Lee 188)。这种伦理诗学不仅仅关涉人的生存中的美学面向,更强调生存的伦理 面向,是鲜活的个体在面对特定社会环境时主动的伦理选择(ethical choice) 过程,是主体自身"关于如何做人的选择,是人通过教诲和学习而做一个有 道德的人的过程"(聂珍钊73)。下面我们从福柯伦理谱系学的四重框架入手, 阐释本雅明对波德莱尔的阅读,从而分析本雅明在论述中透露出的现代性精 神气质或伦理品性。

#### 二、真实欲望之匮乏:波德莱尔的伦理实体

福柯认为,现代性伦理框架的伦理实体是欲望,"可以说,现代'公 式'是欲望,它在理论层面得到了强化,在实践层面得到了承认"(福柯 170)。根据此框架,本雅明对波德莱尔的阅读也将欲望作为波德莱尔的伦理 实体——在波德莱尔诗歌中,欲望是他力图抗争的核心要素。但是,波德莱 尔不是将欲望表达为黑格式的生命能量,也不是福柯意义上的"性艺术"(ars erotica),而是将欲望看作是一种已丧失之物的缺席或不在场。通过对欲望的 表达,波德莱尔对自我中已丧失的部分进行细察。只有将个体欲望看作是一 种匮乏和不在场,才有可能发现真实的集体欲望,这对"无阶级的大众社会" 而言异常重要, 苏珊·巴克-莫斯 (Susan Buck-Morss) 认为这正是本雅明《拱 廊街计划》(The Arcades Project)的主旨所在,"本雅明将大众文化的残余 作为哲学真理的来源……这并非由于文化本身具有改变既存事物的能力,而 是说(已逝去)的历史记忆能够有效地影响集体政治意志的改变"(121)。

大众商业文化建立在对欲望的操控之上。在现代都市中,一切都在激发 欲望,但没有什么可以满足欲望。对欲望进行操控的最生动体现就是本雅明 所描绘的拱廊街。拱廊街被剥夺了用于交通便利的使用价值, 主要用来激发 交易和消费的欲望,"拱廊街仅仅是充满意淫挑逗性的贸易之街;它完全被 用来唤起欲望" (Benjamin, The Arcades Project 42, A3a,7)。 拱廊街成为可以 即刻激发欲望、扩散欲望的空间,但与此同时却将激发起的欲望以一种准色 情的、"充满意淫"的方式引向无生命的客体——商品,发展出一种商品恋 物癖心理。在拱廊街中,商品得到盲目崇拜,被注入了一种非人性的生命色彩; 商品被神秘化并被赋予膜拜价值。本雅明的目的就是要揭示以拱廊街为典型 空间的资本主义"商品的拜物教特征"(《本雅明文选》38)以及现代人的 商品恋物癖现象。现代城市居民在对商品的拜物崇拜及商品恋物癖中体验生 活及其活力, "在(拱廊街)这块商品拜物教的朝圣之地,光怪陆离的商品 世界犹如一座'梦幻之城'让城市居民获得了惬意、舒适和满足的生活"(上 官燕 136)。现代主体被欲望所搅扰,这种欲望被简化为对瞬间震惊体验的一 种即时被动的反应, "个体生活变得极为简单,刺激、利益、时间与意识从 各个方面提供给个体,它们仿佛将人置于一条溪流之中,而人几乎不需要自 己游泳就能浮动"(Simmel 184)。这种主体的典型体现即波德莱尔笔下的"游 荡者"(flâneur)形象, "这些无所事事、四下闲逛的旁观者,满足于睁着 自己的眼睛,一心增长记忆的储藏" (Foucault, Ethics: Subjectivity and Truth 311)。本雅明对游荡者的论述,反映的正是关于向商品灵魂移情的理论,游 荡者无法摆脱商品的诱惑, 商品被欲望化为可以开口说话的人。这种移情效 果带来的是马克思所谓的"死的物对人的完全统治"(马克思 39)。

现代性中,欲望不是一种活生生的生命形式,而是一种商品化的过程。 在物中体现的真正生活之灵韵渐渐消散,取而代之的是一种虚幻的、恋物癖式 的生活。基于对现代性这一特征的敏锐捕捉,波德莱尔将自身的欲望描述为缺 失——一种已逝的生命形式,而不是具有鲜活创造性的能量。与游荡者充满喜 悦,对城市活力和生活即时瞬间的惊喜反应不同,波德莱尔力图对抗自身的欲 望,借此对虚幻的城市生活加以体验。波德莱尔的诗歌将欲望与死亡和颓废而 非生命和美好联结在一起,即便恋人的眼睛和热吻也好比致命毒药:

> 这一切都难比那毒汁. 你绿色的眼睛, 两汪小湖, 弄皱我的灵魂,失去本来面目。 我的梦蜂拥而至, 翼求小憩于这苦难的渊缕。

这一切都难比那毒涎,流自

你的檀口,令人战栗而奇妙, 摇我心旌,冷然 掷我灵魂于遗忘之肆, 使它辗转于死亡之岸! (波德莱尔,《恶之花全集》86-87)

在波德莱尔笔下,女人被"妓女化",女人与爱情成为城市中的一处风景, 成为游荡者观看的欲望对象,成为被商品化浪潮裹挟的一件商品。现代女性只 有被体验为无生命的商品对象的时候才会激起欲望, "作为卖主和商品的妓女 常常需要去拱廊展示自己以吸引路过的行人,并随时准备将自身出卖给恰当的 买主"(上官燕 113)。波德莱尔将欲望描述为了无生趣的空洞之物,欲望作 为伦理实体、作为自我的一部分已完全被商品化; 借助欲望的商品化, 现代主 体被客体化。

## 三、浪荡子的修行,波德莱尔的伦理实践

波德莱尔的伦理实践并不是为了将欲望这一伦理实体释放为一种生命形 式,而是将欲望理解为移情于商品化过程的一种匮乏。根据本雅明的解读, 波德莱尔的伦理挑战针对的不仅仅是对商品的移情,而是对商品化潜在毁灭 性及其与死亡之关联的移情。波德莱尔借助一系列独特的"伦理实践"对此 加以应对。本雅明论述到,波德莱尔是一个波西米亚人和密谋者,他与其所 属阶级的道德观及价值观相拮抗,"波德莱尔向人群宣战——带着那种人同 狂风暴雨搏斗时徒然的狂怒"(Charles Baudelaire 154)。他对现代生活中的 英雄形式极为敏感,波德莱尔认为这些英雄形式体现在艺术家、浪荡子、游 荡者、职业密谋家和流氓无产者身上(《波德莱尔美学论文选》429-64)。

哪一种形象才是波德莱尔"伦理实践"的重要参照呢?萨特(Sartre)认 为波德莱尔最具价值的英雄形象是浪荡子主义(dandyism),指出"浪荡作 风将是英雄主义在颓废之中的最后一次闪光……他创造了寄生者群中的寄生 虫: 浪荡子是诗人的寄生虫,诗人自己又是一个压迫阶级的寄生虫"(110), 这是一种朝向精神自我的自恋式、精英式退守。与萨特不同,福柯高度推崇 波德莱尔的浪荡子主义,将其看作是重塑主体性的一种伦理义务:通过自我 的苦行主义,作为现代英雄的浪荡子"不是去发现自己,去发现他的秘密和 他隐藏的事实;现代人是试图创造自己的人。这种现代性并不是要在人本 身的存在之中解放他自己,而是迫使其面对塑造他自己的任务"(Foucault, *Ethics: Subjectivity and Truth* 312) .

但是, 本雅明认为浪荡子、流氓无产者、捡垃圾者、游荡者等形象表现 出的伦理态度只不过是一种伪装:波德莱尔利用这些形象是为了服务于他的 伦理实践——诗歌创作,一种对自我的诗性劳作,"游荡者、流氓无产者、 浪荡子、捡垃圾者等等是他所扮演的众多角色。因为现代英雄不是英雄,所

以他是各种英雄角色的描绘者、扮演者"(《巴黎,19世纪的首都》170)。 现代性的英雄是一个缺席的人物,是一个在历史舞台上尚需扮演的角色。浪 荡子可能是"现代性的最后英雄",他抵制被收编进没有差异的城市大众之中。 但是他的抵抗并不彻底,他无法抗拒使他屈从于商品化平均主义的压倒性力 量。对波德莱尔而言,唯一的英雄主义形式是对英雄主义的描述;现代性的 伦理召唤只能存在于艺术之中,"在波德莱尔眼里,对现在反讽式的英雄 化, ……这些在社会自身或国家政体中都不占有什么位置, 而只能在另一个 不同的领域里得以创生。波德莱尔将这个领域称为艺术"(Foucault, Ethics: Subjectivity and Truth 312) 。

但是,说浪荡子等形象只不过伪装的角色,这并不意味着它们没有意义。 事实上,这些角色身上体现的是非常重要的"伦理实践"功能,是对主体欲 望的精心制作,目的是对欲望向商品的移情加以利用。为此,现代性的英雄 必须将自身完全置于现代性的极端体验之中。现代艺术家必须要生活在这样 的现代性中,将现代性的各种特征镌刻在自己的存在之上。因此,波德莱尔 借助游荡者、浪荡子、流氓无产者和捡垃圾者等形象,是为了通过艺术创作 将自身置于现代生活的震惊体验之中。现代性的英雄走入人群"就像进入一 个巨大的蓄电池"(波德莱尔,《波德莱尔美学论文选》437),既感到震惊, 也充满能量。波德莱尔力图以语言为武器阻挡现代城市体验的冲击:

> 当太阳投下烈焰, 笼罩住城乡 与原野、屋檐与庄稼, 我驱车独往, 演练我幻想的剑术劈刺. 我在每个角落都邂逅到诗意, 我颠踬在似砌石路的音节, 不时为久梦的诗句绊跌。(波德莱尔,《恶之花全集》151)

现代性带来的是一种毁灭性、异化性的震惊体验。波德莱尔将自身最大程 度地暴露于这一震惊体验中,这是如福柯所言的一种苦行般的伦理实践,是他 作为一位现代人所表现出的"浪荡子的修行主义,他将自己的身体、行为、感觉、 情绪乃至他的生存本身都熔铸成一件艺术品"(Foucault, Ethics: Subjectivity and Truth 312) ——这是他在诗歌意象中表达现代性真实面貌的前提。只有将 自身置于现代性的震惊之中,诗人才能在诗歌中捕捉到生活或生命"在空间的 光彩夺目的爆发"(波德莱尔,《波德莱尔美学论文选》445)。

# 四、忧郁与愤怒:波德莱尔的屈从化模式

满足上述伦理实践,需要培养一种对待现代生活的独特态度。波德莱尔 对人群及街道的快乐与诱惑高度敏感,"如天空之于鸟,水之于鱼,人群是 他的领域。……生活在芸芸众生之中,生活在反复无常、变动不居、短暂和 永恒之中,是一种巨大的快乐"(《波德莱尔美学论文选》437)。然而,他 却自觉地摒弃了这种快乐,培养出一种忧郁和愤怒的伦理品性,"波德莱尔 发现自己的时代没有任何可爱之处, ……对此, 他不能欺骗自己"(本雅明, 《巴黎, 19世纪的首都》170)。

本雅明认为,波德莱尔伦理实践及抒情诗歌背后隐藏的是"暴力、急迫 与愤怒"(175)。借用福柯的术语,这种伦理品性可以被阐释为一种"屈从 化模式",这是一种典型的苦行主义,是自我对自我的精心制作,是对匿名 大众令人陶醉的快乐的主动拒斥,波德莱尔"深深地卷入他们,但完全是为 了用轻蔑的一瞥把他们送入忘川"(205)。在愤怒与忧郁中,波德莱尔苦行 般地对城市及大众的快乐加以摒弃,波德莱尔用自己的精神和肉体致力于躲 避震惊的伤害,这种震惊防御被鲜明地刻画在一种战斗姿态中。借助这种屈 从化的模式,诗人将欲望重塑为一种缺失,将其转化为失落与毁灭的诗歌意象, 用以表达现代性的真相: "我想追上退隐的上帝,却心劳力拙;/席卷而来的 夜已建起它的帝国,/黑暗、潮湿、阴森和恐怖的渊缕"(波德莱尔,《恶之 花全集》271)。根据福柯的伦理框架阅读波德莱尔,需要我们认识到这种愤 怒与忧郁不仅是对现代生活的被动反应,而是表达了一种主动选择的伦理态 度。透过这种自我培养的忧郁品性,我们才能发掘出波德莱尔对于道德和社 会需求的屈从化或主体化模式。

本雅明在《论波德莱尔的几个母题》一文中,借助对"通感"(synaesthesia) 概念的辨析探讨了波德莱尔的精神品性(ethos):指出在波德莱尔的《恶之花》 中,"通感"概念"与'现代美'概念并行不悖"(《巴黎,19世纪的首都》 216)。但这种"现代美"不是如象征主义者阐释的那样是对自然生命有机内 在性的证明,而是代表着一种无法挽回的失去与衰败,"是献给某种永远失 去的东西"(217)。波德莱尔的现代性态度与自然生命针锋相对,他对欲望 的态度是愤怒与暴力:

> 因此我暗想,某个晚上, 当寻欢的时刻敲响, 像个胆小鬼,偷偷潜进 你女性的百宝箱.

以痛惩你得意的肌肤, 玷污你被恕的乳房, 在你惊愕的腰上 弄一个又大又深的伤。(波德莱尔,《恶之花全集》289)

因此,本雅明写到,波德莱尔诗篇的崇高正在于对"有机体和生命的毁 灭, ······在对自然的对抗之中, 存在着对有机生命根深蒂固的抗争"("Central Park" 45)。对于现代性对主体性的摧毁,波德莱尔的伦理学拒斥任何补偿或 庇护。他对生命本身充满愤怒;正是籍由这种愤怒的屈从化或主体化模式, 波德莱尔的伦理实践才能达至他想获取的伦理目标。

# 五、死亡抵抗与寓言体验:波德莱尔的伦理目标

本雅明非常清楚波德莱尔伦理学的"目标"所在。在《拱廊街计划》"论 波德莱尔"一章中,本雅明借助约书亚(Joshua)的愿望来表达这一伦理目 标:约书亚向神大声召唤,希翼神能够改变自然的进程,在太阳的运转路径 上创造一个停顿: "波德莱尔最深层的意图是要打断世界的进程。这是约书 亚的愿望……他的暴力、他的急迫和他的愤怒均出自这一意图;也正是由于 这一意图,人们不断地试图把世界撕的粉碎(或将世界吟入梦乡)。在这一 意图下,他为死亡提供了一个伴唱:他对死亡的努力与赞赏"(The Arcades Project 318, J50, 2)

波德莱尔鼓励对死亡的精心制作;他试图摧毁自然生命本身,借此认识 到必需对看似不可违背的自然进程加以破坏,就此本雅明评论到,"现代性 所产生的对人类自然创造活力的阻力,远非个人所能抗拒。如果一个人深感 疲惫不堪,而求助于死亡来逃避,这也是可以理解的。现代性应该置于这样 一个标志之下: 自杀。自杀这种行为象征着绝不向敌对精神让步的英雄意志。 这种自杀,不是屈从和放弃,而是英雄的激情。这,正是现代性在激情领域 里的成就"(Charles Baudelaire 75)。正如约书亚在太阳的轨道上创造一次 停留,波德莱尔也想让世界停滞不前。实现这一伦理重任的手段就是诗歌。 波德莱尔通过诗歌意象,努力让人们在现代城市的活力中看到生命的了无生 趣,并在历史的自然进程中创造一次中断。

本雅明认为,使这一文学空间可见的方式就是寓言(allegory),寓言是 一种特殊的表达方式,"是从僵化之物和无足轻重的东西中提取意义的过程" (Sontag 20)。寓言将物的生命灵韵提取出来,并将之展现在一个衰败与失 落的空间意象之中。本雅明指出,"忧郁者所能允许自身的唯一快感,而且 是最有力的快感,就是寓言"(《本雅明文选》146)。资本主义商品化过程 使一种虚假、随意的生命形式(交换价值)取代物品的实际生命形式(使用 价值)。寓言就是将生命从客体对象中汲取出来,并使其模仿商品的力量。 在寓言中,商品的本质就如同不断堆积的尸体,在生命与文学之间的空间显 现出来,正如伊格尔顿(Eagleton)指出的,"寓言性对象的意义,诚如商品 的意义一样, 总是位于别处, 离心到它的物质存在之外; 但它愈变得多重性, 它的破译现实界的法定权力就愈成为不拘一格的和创造性的"(327)。借助 寓言,波德莱尔创造了一种将写作作为商品的方式,将写作本身看作是一种

完全脱离自身的主体形象。因此,寓言也可被看作是一种自我书写的形式, 是对自我伦理目标的隐秘表达:这种自我书写与创造新的生活方式、新的主 体性模式相关。在此意义上,寓言就是一种精神操练,是一种真理话语主体 化的模式,即福柯所谓的"品性-塑造"或"伦理-诗学"(ethic-poetic),"它 是将真理(alētheia)转变为品性(ēthos)的一个动因"(Foucault, Ethics: Subjectivity and Truth 209) .

因此,寓言意象与现代主体性之真理、与现代主体之真相密切相关。但 寓言并不是以象征的形式描述真相的存在,而是揭露真相的缺席——寓言呈 现的是千疮百孔外衣中真理的暂时性和历史的垂死面孔, "寓言在思想领域 里就如同物质领域里的废墟"(本雅明,《本雅明文选》138)。它们揭示的 不是知识(Erkenntnis),而是真理(Wahreit):知识是可以占有并呈现的, 而真理则不可展示,正如本雅明对卡夫卡的评价,"他从不尽心竭力地写可 以阐释的作品,反倒使尽浑身解数,使他的作品成为不可阐释的"(《经验 与贫乏》360)。真理是各种极端体验的永恒轮转。通过寓言,超个体化的现 代主体同时被揭示为一种缺失——一种空虚、幻觉和空洞的所指。因此,波 德莱尔的现代性气质旨在融体验与真理于一体,其目标不在于仅仅展现真理, 而是要将真理镌刻在自己的生命体验之上。如此一来,他可以赋予真理以体 验生命之难的伦理向度。波德莱尔的诗歌意象是其生命体验的生动表达,但 表达的并非仅仅是表征性的知识,而是难以表征的真理,这一真理包含了相 互冲突的现代性极端体验。

在这个意义上,波德莱尔伦理实践的目标是将现代性冲突的真相——人 类自我异化的诸种困境(本雅明认为这种困境主要是个体经验的破裂与碎片 化)——铭刻在他自己身上,从而在诗歌意象中使人们对这一真相有所觉察、 触及和体验。通过这种方式,他试图使陷入现代性对个体经验贬低之困境的 诸众(multitude)<sup>1</sup>与这一真相直接遭遇、短兵相接,从而希望打破世界的自 然进程,在打破旧世界的过程中,塑造一种具有抵抗现实世界的伦理潜能。 就此,本雅明指出波德莱尔的诗歌"处处昭显了现代废墟社会中'自我异化 的人类'的困境……这样的困境将极大地激发现代人反抗物化世界的潜能"(上 官燕 69)。

#### 结语

波德莱尔借助诗歌创作对现代资本主义社会体制及权力关系展开伦理批

<sup>1</sup> 诸众(multitude)概念是当前意大利左翼思潮的一个重要概念,是后马克思主义用以替代传 统无产阶级新的历史主体概念,"诸众是一种存在模式,现今流行的存在模式,是一种新的诸 众的主体性……当代诸众的经验主要起源于对恐惧/寻求安全感这一辩证的改变。这个多一 这个因为他们是多——是共享着'不在家的感觉'的那些个体,事实上,他们把这种经验置于 他们自己的生活和政治实践的中心。"参见保罗·维尔诺:《诸众的语法: 当代生活方式的分析》, 董必成译, 商务印书馆, 2017年, 第 42-44页。

判,通过文学表达的去审美化,坚守文学批判功能的伦理性,这是一种典型 的文学伦理学批评实践。正如聂珍钊原创性指出的,"文学源于人类伦理表 达之需,将文学视为道德的产物,坚持文学批评的道德责任,强调文学的教 诲功能,具有鲜明的价值立场。文学的审美是非功能化的,它主要是通向和 实现教诲功能的途径" (聂珍钊 71)。借助福柯的伦理谱系学框架解读本雅 明对波德莱尔的阅读阐释,可以发现波德莱尔的现代性伦理态度来源于其与 真理-体验之间的独特关系,而这种关系正是波德莱尔通过其伦理实践所创 造的,其目的是要发挥文学艺术的社会批判和伦理教诲功能。

文学伦理学批评分析的正是"人与自我、人与他人、人与社会及人与自 然等复杂关系中的伦理问题,解剖特定历史环境中不同的伦理选择范例,分 析伦理选择的发生、发展和结果,从不同的伦理选择中寻找道德启示,发挥 文学的教诲功能"(聂珍钊71)。从这一角度看来,波德莱尔并非将艺术作 为工具来向权力言说真相,而是通过对现代性快感的苦行式拒斥对自我加以 精心制作,目的是将现代性的真相镌刻在他的自我之上,从而生成为有能力 揭露现代性异化本质及以商品化为表征的虚假生活的现代主体。这是一种伦 理选择,是在特定的社会环境下对自身主体身份的确认,"从本质上说,伦 理选择是在特定环境或语境中对如何做人的选择,也是对人的身份的建构和 确认"(聂珍钊77)。在本雅明看来,波德莱尔的伦理选择在于其文学教诲 主体身份的建构和英雄主义的抗争: 他勇敢地将自己暴露于现代性的震惊效 应之下,切身体验现代性的真相,并将这一真相贯穿于自己真实的艺术生活 之中;波德莱尔借助诗歌创作,将自己建构为书写的主体,揭示现代性的弊 端及其超脱之路。

#### **Works Cited**

Adorno, Theodor. "A portrait of Walter Benjamin." Prisms. Trans. Samuel and Shierry Weber. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press, 1997.

Benjamin, Walter. Illuminations. Ed. Hannah Arendt. Trans. Harry Zohn. New York: Schochen Books, 1969.

- —. "Central Park." New German Critique 34.2(1985): 32-58.
- —. Charles Baudelaire: A Lyric Poet in the Era of High Capitalism. Trans. Harry Zohn. London: Verso,
- —. Walter Benjamin: Selected Writings, vol. 2, part 1: 1927-1930. Ed. Michael W. Jennings, et al. Cambridge, MA: Harvard UP, 2005.
- -... The Arcades Project. Trans. Howard Eiland & Kevin Mclaughlin. Cambridge, MA: Harvard UP, 1999.

Buck-Morss, Susan. The Dialectics of Seeing: Walter Benjamin and the Arcades Project. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press, 1989.

- During, Simon. Foucault and Literature: Towards a Genealogy of Writing. London: Routledge, 1992.
- Eagleton, Terry. The Ideology of the Aesthetic. Oxford: Basil Blackwell, 1990.
- Foucault, Michel. Aesthetics, Method, and Epistemology: Essential Works of Foucault, 1954-1984, vol. 2. Ed. Paul Rabinow. New York: The New Press, 2000.
- -. Ethics, Subjectivity and Truth: The Essential Works of Foucault, 1954-1984, vol. 1. Ed. Paul Rabinow. New York: The New Press, 1997.
- —. Technologies of the Self: A Seminar with Michel Foucault. Ed. Luther H. Martin, et al. Amherst: Massachusetts Press, 1988.
- —. The Hermeneutics of the Subject: Lectures at Collège de France 1981-1982. Trans. Graham Burchell. New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2005.
- —. The Use of Pleasure: The History of Sexuality, Vol. 2. London: Penguin, 1992.
- Lee, James. "Ethopoiesis: Foucault's Late Ethics and the Sublime Body." New Literary History 44.2(2013): 179-98.
- Pensky, Max. Melancholy Dialectics: Walter Benjamin and the Play of Mourning. Amherst: U of Massachusetts P, 1992.
- Simmel, Georg. Simmel on Culture: Selected Writing. Ed. David Frisky and Mike Featherstone. London: SAGE Publications Ltd, 1997.
- Sontag, Susan. "Introduction." One-Way Street and Other Writings. Trans. Edmund Jephcott and Kingsley Shorter. London: NLB, 1979.
- 保罗•维尔诺:《诸众的语法: 当代生活方式的分析》,董必成译。北京: 商务印书馆,2017年。
- [Virno, Paolo. A Grammar of the Multitude: For an Analysis of Contemporary Forms of Life. Trans. Dong Bicheng. Beijing: The Commercial Press, 2017.
- 卡尔·马克思:《1844年经济学-哲学手稿》,刘丕坤译。北京:人民出版社,1979年。
- [Marx, Karl. Economic and Philosophic Manuscripts of 1844. Trans. Liu Pikun. Beijing: People's Publishing House, 1979.]
- 聂珍钊: "文学伦理学批评的价值选择与理论建构",《中国社会科学》10(2020):71-92+205-206。
- [Nie Zhenzhao. "Value Choice and the Theoretical Construction of Ethical Literary Criticism." Social Sciences in China 10(2020): 71-92+205-206.]
- 米歇尔·福柯:《自我技术:福柯文选 III》,汪民安编。北京:北京大学出版社,2016年。
- [Foucault, Michel. Technologies of the Self: Selected Writings of Michel Foucault, vol. 3. Ed. Wang Min'an. Beijing: Peking UP, 2016.]
- 让一保罗•萨特: 《波德莱尔》,施康强译。北京: 燕山出版社,2006年。
- [Sartre, Jean-Paul. Baudelaire. Trans. Shi Kangqiang. Beijing: Yanshan Publishing House, 2006.]
- 上官燕: 《游荡者,城市与现代性:理解本雅明》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。
- [Shang Guanyan. The flâneur, the City and Modernity: Understanding Benjamin. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.1

- 瓦尔特•本雅明:《本雅明文选》,陈永国 马海良编。北京:中国社会科学出版社,2011年。 [Benjamin, Walter. Selected Writings of Walter Benjamin. Ed. Chen Yongguo and Ma Hailiang. Beijing: China Social Sciences Press, 2011.]
- 一:《巴黎,19世纪的首都》,刘北成译。上海:上海人民出版社,2006年。
- [ ... Paris, The Capital of the 19th Century. Trans. Liu Beicheng. Shanghai: Shanghai People's Publishing House, 2006.]
- —:《发达资本主义时代的抒情诗人:论波德莱尔》,张旭东 魏文生译。北京:生活·读书·新 知三联书店,1992年。
- [-...Charles Baudelaire: A Lyric Poet in the Era of High Capitalism. Trans. Zhang Xudong and Wei Wensheng. Beijing: SDX Joint Publishing Company, 1992.]
- ---: 《经验与贫乏》, 王炳钧 杨劲译。天津: 百花文艺出版社, 1999年。
- [ ... Experience and Indigence. Trans. Wang Bingjun and Yang Jin. Tianjin: Baihua Literature and Art Publishing House, 1992.]
- 夏尔·波德莱尔: 《波德莱尔美学论文选》,郭宏安译。北京: 人民文学出版社,2008年。
- [Baudelaire, Charles. Selected Essays on Aesthetics of Baudelaire. Trans. Guo Hong'an. Beijing: People's Literature Publishing House, 2008. ]
- ——: 《恶之花全集》,欧凡译。济南:山东文艺出版社,2016年。
- [-...The Flowers of Evil: Complete Works. Trans. Ou Fan. Jinan: Shandong Literature and Art Publishing House, 2016.]
- 杨革新: "从文学思潮到文学批评理论:文学伦理学批评的构建之道",《文学跨学科研究》1 (2021): 1-6.
- [Yang Gexin. "From Literary Trends to the Theory of Literary Criticism: The Theoretical Construction of Ethical Literary Criticism." Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 1(2021): 1-6.]

知行合一: 纳丁·戈迪默《伯格的女儿》的文学伦理学解读

The Unity of Knowing and Doing: An Exploration of Nadine Gordimer's *Burger's Daughter* from the Perspective of Ethical Literary Criticism

肖丽华 (Xiao Lihua)

内容摘要:《伯格的女儿》是南非国宝级当代女作家纳丁·戈迪默最重要的长篇小说之一,小说以王阳明的"知而不行是为不知"作为题记,描述了主人公罗莎由伦理困境到伦理选择的心路历程,强调了伦理的实践性本质。在小说结尾,罗莎主动结束流亡回到南非,积极投身于南非革命运动中的黑人救助工作。她的这一伦理选择对于在种族隔离制度时代的南非如何实现政治正义,具有重要意义,体现了戈迪默对南非社会与政治生活的担当与勇气,也体现了严肃的现实主义文学所具有的教诲功能。

关键词:《伯格的女儿》;知行合一;伦理身份;伦理选择;政治正义作者简介:肖丽华,宁波大学科学技术学院副教授,文学博士(后),主要从事女性主义文学批评、当代南非文学的教学与研究工作。本文为国家社科基金项目"纳丁·戈迪默小说创作中的民族、性别与叙事关系研究"【项目编号17BWW077】、国家社科基金重大项目"非洲英语文学史"【项目编号19ZDA296】和教育部人文社科项目"在历史汇流中的抉择与失误:中国女性主义批判"【项目编号16YJC751032】的阶段性成果。

**Title:** The Unity of Knowing and Doing: An Exploration of Nadine Gordimer's *Burger's Daughter* from the Perspective of Ethical Literary Criticism

**Abstract:** Burger's Daughter is one of the most important novels written by Nadine Gordimer, a famous writer in South Africa. The novel cites Wang Yangming's theory of "knowing and doing," and describes the protagonist Rosa's exploration of herself, including her identity crisis, ethical dilemma and ethical choice. At the end of the novel, Rosa ends her exile and returns to South Africa to take an active part in revolution. Her ethical choice is of great significance to the realization of political justice in South Africa in the era of apartheid. It embodies Gordimer's courage and responsibility, and it also reflects the educational function of serious realistic

literature.

Key words: Burger's Daughter; The Unity of Knowing and Doing; ethical identities; ethical choices; Political justice

Author: Xiao Lihua is Associate Professor at the College of Science and Technology, Ningbo University (Ningbo, 315000, China). Her research interests include Feminist literary criticism and Contemporary South African Literature (Email: treesmemory@126.com).

纳丁·戈迪默(Nadine Gordimer)是南非著名国宝级女作家,被曼德拉 誉为"南非良心",因"以热切而直接的笔触描写在她那个环境当中极其复 杂的个人与社会关系",于1991获得诺贝尔文学奖。《伯格的女儿》被认为 是她最重要的长篇小说之一,描写了共产主义战士莱昂内尔•伯格的女儿罗莎, 寻求自我,获得真知,实现知行合一的政治伦理选择的过程。有研究者认为 罗莎放弃欧洲的自由生活返回南非,成为了和她父亲一样的革命者,这是不 可思议的,于是判断戈迪默小说中的伦理特征是含混与模棱两可的(Helgesson Stefan 36)。然而从文学伦理学批评的视角来看,罗莎的转变过程本质上是一 个伦理选择的过程,体现了德行政治伦理重视知行合一,强调实践的特性,"在 人类文明发展史上,人类在做出第一次生物性选择即获得人的形式之后,还 经历了第二次选择即伦理选择"(聂珍钊,《文学伦理学批评导论》267)。 而"伦理选择过程是自然选择完成之后人类道德文明的新阶段,是人必须经 历的通过具体的自我伦理选择活动获取人的道德本质的过程"(聂珍钊,《文 学伦理学批评的价值选择与理论建构》73-75)。罗莎对南非现实与父辈革命 信条的理解逐渐加深,良知转换为实践,做到了知行合一,真正成长为具有 自觉理性和伦理意识的人,完成了自己的伦理选择,运用文学伦理学批评理 论对这一过程进行梳理和解读,我们可以更为深刻地探讨戈迪默的伦理思想, 以及这一伦理选择对于南非社会具有的价值与现实意义。

# 一、"行而不知"所导致的自我认同危机

小说的第一部分通过一种实验性文体描述了主人公罗莎自幼年时代起就 深受革命家庭成长环境的影响,积极投身革命,但是这一行为并非源自于真 实的自我选择,从而产生了认知冲突,并导致了自我认同危机。罗莎的父亲 莱昂内尔•伯格的原型是曾为曼德拉辩护的南非白人律师布拉姆•费舍尔, 受到"推进共产主义"和"阴谋推翻政府"的指控而被判终身监禁,度过11 年的牢狱生活后因病去世。罗莎深受父亲革命之路的影响, 从表面看, 她具 有积极的革命行动力,甚至表现出了天生革命者的卓越才能和智谋。母亲入 狱,她镇定从容前往探监,并能够巧妙地将纸条藏在暖水瓶的盖子里向母亲 汇报情况;父亲年轻的战友诺埃尔被捕入狱,罗莎以未婚妻的身份定期探监,

周旋于狱警,并成功传递消息;父亲入狱、在法庭上被审判之时,她也能够 沉着冷静参加审讯, 但她的知与行却处于分离状态。罗莎的行动源于家庭与 革命环境的外因,对革命的认知并不深刻,她的行是在"不知"状态下的被 动行动,从而她关注的焦点并不在于革命。14岁的罗莎站在监狱外面等待探 监时,她关注的并非是革命的真理,"真正的意识都集中在我骨盆下面的地方, 那里沉重湿淋淋的,持续不停的疼痛,有谁能描述青春期早期月经期间身体 内各种力量分外强烈的积聚?在那个公共场合,我处在每月一次的毁灭性危 机中,我自身构造的清除、撕裂、排泄。"1少女的月经初潮在她的身体觉醒 与意识中别有意味,这是比革命更为私密直接的体验,对这个身体体验的关 注程度超过了要送给母亲的那个写有秘密纸条的暖水瓶,真知必然关联着直 接经验或生命体验。但被忽略的身体感受成为了被压抑的沉默力量,她不得 不在行动上扮演合格的革命者后代, 而她的认知很明显没有办法超越私我直 接升华到同样的高度,所以她对革命与政治的认知呈现被动与困顿,这一状 况造成了其行动的延宕,更在深层导致了人物的认知冲突。

戈迪默运用一种非常实验性的文体来表现这种认知冲突,整部小说"如 同一块一块的马赛克拼成",人称频繁转换,视角跳跃,以破折号连接大量对话, 被称之为"文体分叉","没有美学的复杂性,就不可能有文本的伦理复杂性"(陈 礼珍 389-414)。作者以此展现罗莎知与行的不统一与多层次的认知冲突。首先, 莱昂内尔•伯格的革命信念与罗莎的自我认知形成了第一层次的冲突,他是 一个知行合一、满怀理想的革命者,他的形象与政治理念对于罗莎最后能否 形成自己的道德判断,做出伦理选择并付诸于行动至关重要。伯格追求政治 正义,憎恨种族政治,他期待的理想世界不是非黑即白的分离主义,而是不 同肤色不同种族的人放弃仇恨与压迫共建和谐幸福,他愿意为此献出生命,"如 果我的一生中有让我坚信的东西, 那就是我完全按照我的良知做事, 如果我 没有努力去消除我的国家的种族主义,那我反倒是有罪的。"他的革命信念 与革命行动高度合一,他是罗莎自我探索与建立伦理规则的依据与标准,但 此时的罗莎,由于知行分离产生的冲突,无法真正认同伯格,出现了自我认 同危机,罗莎对于自己是谁,对于革命的意义都产生了困惑。戈迪默进而描 述了第二层次的冲突,来自于罗莎内在分裂的自我,这一部分主要通过罗莎 的意识流还原其认知过程。她在被动却又积极的革命行动中,偶尔会冒出可 怕念头,"盼望过父亲的死",以及父亲去世之后,她竟有种获得自由的感觉。"当 罗莎还在父亲的影响下时,她被困在自己隐喻的地下,她必须从中解放自己, 以实现自己的潜力"(Dimitriu Ileana 1045-057)。因此罗莎呈现矛盾的两面, 在伯格被判监禁后,罗莎终获自由,可以象一个普通女孩子那样生活,打壁球, 看电影院,裸露晒得黝黑的皮肤,甚至谈恋爱,她认为自己的身份由两层含

<sup>1 《</sup>伯格的女儿》,李云、王艳红译,北京:北京燕山出版社,2018.4。其余引文皆出自该版本, 不做赘述。

义构成——"作为伯格的女儿,也作为罗莎",她不愿被动地继承父母为非 洲人争取"和平、土地、面包"的革命身份。

小说第三层次的冲突是通过罗莎与康拉德的对话展现的。康拉德是一个 面色苍白的政治虚无主义者、扮演了罗莎思想的助产士、他使用各种各样的 提问,迫使罗莎直面自己的认知问题。他们谈起莱昂纳尔•伯格,康拉德指 出: "你是在别人的期望中长大的。他们告诉你怎样想是适当的,怎样做事 对的。"康拉德的直言不讳逼迫内在分裂的罗莎重新检验父母给予的思想遗产。 罗莎在建构自我认知时,没有办法摆脱家庭以及父母为之献身的那个革命事 业的影响,"我们生活于其中的实践或习俗对于实现我们作为自由个体的认同, 是一个至关重要的因素"(Charles Taylor 47)。她在一个虔诚的家庭中成长, 也许没有人反复灌输马克思或列宁主义,可是他们就萦绕在每个人的心里。 但是对于罗莎的成长而言,除了这些宏大的革命背景,影响同样深刻的还有 那些特殊的私人经验。正如沙佩威尔惨案对她产生震动的不是枪杀事件而是 发现自己的妈妈有另外一个男人。"什么是真正的自我,这个问题正以它们 的形式不断向我提出来。"罗莎潜意识里的自我已经抗拒与从父亲那里继承 的革命身份绑定到一起, "我只能过一种需要——政治需要?"于是她对自 己的血统 、基因,产生了怨恨,自我认知和在现实中不得不扮演的身份形成 了断裂。

罗莎要消弭这种自我分裂,建构全新的自我,她必须从从父亲对自己生 活优先权的无所不包的影响中解脱出来。为了能够在心理上逃离父母的影响, 她首先要完成地理上的逃离,在她的欧洲之旅和她走向自我理解的内心旅程 中,她探索自我自由与公众责任之间的艰难平衡。然而试图逃避自己的伦理 责任,罗莎却只能陷入更大的伦理困境之中。

# 二、"知而不行"的伦理选择与伦理困境

罗莎由于行而不知所产生的自我否定,从而产生了巨大的身份危机,"身 份是同道德规范联系在一起的,因此身份的改变就容易导致伦理混乱,引起 冲突"(聂珍钊 267),小说接下去描述了罗莎由身份冲突而陷入了政治虚无 主义,她缺少伯格对革命理想的认知,更缺少付诸实践的勇气,正是如此, 罗莎越来越质疑自己的身份与革命行动的价值,因此她必须通过自己的伦理 选择才能走出这一困境。她首先认识到在父亲的革命遗产下生活,她就不可 能选择自己的人生,"我没有任何护照,因为我是我父亲的女儿,和我有任 何关系的人必须有所准备。他们可能会被怀疑,因为我是我父亲的女儿", 她甚至不能自由择业。接下来发生了两个事件,对她的认知带来触动,加强 了她的虚无感,促使她离开南非到法国投奔父亲的前妻卡佳。

第一个事件有关一个穷白人微不足道的死亡。罗莎每个中午都会到城市 广场享用自己的午餐,感受作为一个普通人的生活自由。太阳和鸽子的温暖

的叫声,喷泉,公园长凳,职员们从商店买的三明治和水果,情人们在这里 共享午餐,人们在草地上哄闹,〔……〕她在此亲眼目睹了一个穷白人毫无 意义的死亡,她认为革命并不能让人获得意义与幸福。"我们所有人都是无 罪的,我们能做什么呢?什么也改变不了他的孤立状态。"南非的悲惨现状, 深深纠缠在历史罪恶之中,父辈革命者们那些伟大的献身行为改变过什么呢? 面对这样的现实,罗莎倍感无力,以往的目标和价值不适合了,再也找不到 信仰,她无奈地认为"我们并不能改变什么,我们没有办法对这件事负责"。 第二个事件是驴子事件。南非历史上曾颁布过《土著土地法》、《特定住区 法》、《班图人迁移法》等多部臭名昭著的种族隔离法,将黑人限定在贫民窟, 生存条件恶劣, 罪恶丛生。罗莎就在黑人聚居区无意中目睹了那头可怜的畜 生——一头被黑人主人暴虐鞭笞的驴子,"我没有看到鞭子,我看到了痛苦, 一种存在于自身的破坏力,没有强夺者的强夺,没有折磨者的折磨。从拇指夹、 行刑架到电击,花样百出层层递增的痛苦,来自鞭打,恐吓、饥饿、单独囚禁—— 集中营、苦役,流放,西巴利亚的酷寒,曼德拉,西苏鲁,姆贝基……莫名 的死亡",这头驴子成为了南非所有苦难与暴力的隐喻,是罗莎从童年时代 起就熟悉的南非现实。罗莎幻想自己那一刻冲上前去——毫不逃避,带着愤 怒和正义, 站在他们面前, 站在吓坏的妇女和小孩, 喝醉了的残暴的男人面前。 但是罗莎并没有勇气做出这样的伦理选择,而是"坐在那里,转过头,缩着脖子, 缩成一团避免听到鞭打声",然后驱车远离了那个苦难的现场。这一事件是 罗莎知而不行最直接的表现,给她带来巨大的精神压力,"我本来可以阻止, 那种痛苦。在那头驴之后,我不知道该怎样生活在莱昂纳尔的国家。"虽然 她对于自己没有按照德性律令做出更符合良知的伦理选择感到痛苦,但是她 仍然认为即使她挺身而出并不能改变南非本身。"人伦理意识与伦理行动出 现了断裂,即便人物具有了区分善恶的伦理意识,但并未采取相应的伦理行 动,就不能做出正确的伦理选择"(尚必武 22-30)。戈迪默强调伦理观念的 实践性本质,正如题记中王阳明的"知而不行是为不知",伦理选择中"行" 具有更为重要的价值, 在充满了暴力与苦难, 每天都有死亡发生的南非, 仅 仅停留在沉思阶段的知,对现实的改变是没有意义的。

驴子事件后罗莎离开南非,她前往法国投奔父亲的前妻卡佳,沉醉于法 国的浪漫生活,摆在罗莎面前的是双重的伦理规则,其一是革命家庭所给与 的基因与血脉里带来的"身份",她必须为南非的苦难有所行动;其二则是 六七十年代流行于欧洲的政治虚无主义与自由思想,以及卡佳身上所代表的 与莱昂纳尔伯格不一致的政治伦理,罗莎"沉浸在酒和愉悦的氛围中,忘记 了社会效用的程度。"恋爱,泡吧,海边游泳,暧昧的游戏,混迹于一群自 由知识分子之间,并与已有家室的巴黎教授陷入到一场激情恋爱中。20世纪 六、七十年代的欧美, 随着学潮落幕, 反越战、嬉皮士、女权运动、民权运 动的深入,青年知识分子中流行着无政府主义的倾向,他们反对一切政治统 治和政治权威, 抗拒宏大叙事, 消解英雄, "世界呈现无价值的外观", 欧 洲文明某种程度上呈现虑无主义的危机, "虑无主义与犬儒主义,失望与焦 虑,怀疑与自厌都是知识分子必须生活于其中的资本主义社会的自发性产品" (Georg Lukacs 91)。罗莎去国离乡在欧洲所感受到的就是这样一种全新的 思想氛围,这一切与南非这样一个还需要英雄的国家,呈现一种历史的错位。 罗莎也终于承认,"如果你要问我——我来此是不是为了所谓的朝圣、崇拜 或者突破传统,了解有关我父亲的事情……我是想知道如何摆脱他。"在自 由而又虚无的氛围中,父辈们曾经珍视的价值、理想、意义等都成为她努力 摆脱的精神遗产。

罗莎不够明晰的认知,影响了她行动的坚定;而行动的逃避,也使她的 认知出现了错位。但是双重的伦理规则同时作用于罗莎, 事实上导致罗莎陷 入到了伦理的困境之中。她无法回避一个真实存在的南非现实,没有一个人 可以置身于"历史"之外:四十年代的维特沃特斯兰德的黑人矿工大罢工, 费舍尔的被捕,工人之盾,五十年代的反共产主义法,解散共产党,六十年 代的焚烧通行证运动,沙佩威尔惨案,小说中出现的这些真实的历史事件, 就是伯格为之奋斗的时代,也是罗莎的生活本身,"我呼吸着它,就象孩子 不管从何处被投入世界,都必须毫无选择地呼吸山外的空气或者城里的烟雾 一样。"她混迹于这群欧洲自由知识分子之间,却深深地感觉到自己永远也 成不了一个欧洲人,这一伦理困境暗示出罗莎只有围绕其伦理身份进行伦理 选择,才能进入从否定自我到寻找自我再到重构自我身份的重生之旅。

# 三、"知行合一"的伦理实践与南非的政治正义

对罗莎而言,伦理选择之路实际是不断对自我身份进行重构和完善的过 程。"从起源上说,人的身份是进行自我选择的结果。伦理选择是从伦理上 解决人的身份问题,不仅要从本质上把人同兽区别开来,而且还需要从责任、 义务和道德等价值方面对人的身份进行确认",伦理身份的确定是伦理选择 的一部分, "在伦理选择的过程中, 人的伦理意识开始产生, 善恶的观念逐 渐形成,而这些都是通过教诲实现的〔……〕人类的文明史表明,人类主要 通过一系列道德事例和榜样进行教诲或从中得到教诲"(聂珍钊,《文学伦 理学批评:论文学的基本功能与核心价值》10)。在罗莎完成伦理选择的过 程中,莱昂纳尔一直扮演了道德榜样的角色,虽然曾经被罗莎激烈地否定过, 事实上一直都是罗莎衡量世界、评价自我的尺度,并最终在这一引导之下做 出适合南非政治正义的伦理选择并付诸实践。罗莎最后踏上解放之路,从父 母压倒一切的精神状态走向解放之旅,这是一次名副其实的"自我审视的冒 险"。

罗苏投奔卡佳后却逐渐意识到在欧洲自由知识分子眼中,基本人权是生 来俱有的天然权力,但是在她的国家,这一切还只能是革命乌托邦,她的父

母为此付出了自己的全部。伦纳德曾劝告罗莎忘记父辈,重新开始自己的生 活,一个人能按照你喜欢的方式生活,那才是最重要的。但是非洲是罗莎的 家,父母为了南非献出了生命,这是罗莎和欧洲情人不能共享的历史。在走 向知行合一的过程中, 良知并非神秘的先天模式, 而是需要在实践中逐渐培 养、完成并实现的, "人因选择伦理而成为真正的人, 社会因选择伦理而演 绎为共同体的文明"(陈红薇 14-21)。她记起了父亲的家里, 白人和黑人如 何和谐的统一到一起, "白人的该隐和黑人的亚伯在一起,这种全新的手足 之情为走向最终的四海之内皆兄弟铺平了道路。"她意识到其实许久以来,"我 的父母成功的把我变成了南非黑鬼兄弟。"

罗莎伦理选择的重要转折点在于巴塞尔的午夜来电,这是她成长的顿悟。 为什么巴塞尔的电话能成为罗莎伦理选择的关键点?对此我们需要关注小说 发表之前南非的历史背景,即1976年索韦托学生运动,这是南非黑人意识复 兴的标志。由于黑白对立,黑人不信任白人对于黑人解放的真诚与正面意义, 主张黑人解放只能由黑人来完成,而《伯格的女儿》是戈迪默对黑人意识运 动的回应,是对索韦托及其后背景下白人的角色的调查,戈迪默试图解决这 个巨大的心理历史问题。这正体现出戈迪默对文学道德功能的强调,"文学 的功利性就在于它的道德教诲。道德教诲是文学固有的属性,也是文学的最 高属性"(王松林 46-55)。巴塞尔在电话中表明自己憎恨白人,"世界上所 有的人都必须被告知,他(伯格)是多么了不起的英雄,他为黑人受了多少 苦难,人人都必须为他哭泣,在电视上播放他的生平,在报纸上发表纪念他 的文章。可是象我父亲那样的人象狗一样病死,在监狱里变老,在监狱里被 杀害,许多象伯格一样的黑人,可是他们却不会被在英国电视上宣传",他 要求罗莎忘掉那个一起生活的小男孩,别再想那个黑人兄弟。——这次通话 逼迫罗莎重新梳理自己的认知。巴塞尔对于黑白对立的历史意识表明在黑人 觉醒的影响下,很多黑人青年改变了自己的想法和对白人的态度。那么问题 的关键是罗莎这样的白人知识分子面对黑人的仇视, 应如何回应?

巴塞尔的敌意使罗莎感到一夜之间我们成功将自己调到了他们家中的历 史书已经为我们准备好了的位置——他,苦涩的,我,有罪的,"我恨故我在"。 种族隔离制度已经让南非变成了地狱,人人互相仇恨,"我们的孩子和我们 孩子的孩子。父辈的罪行,最终,孩子因父辈的罪行向父辈复仇。他们的孩 子和孩子的孩子,那就是未来,父辈无法预见"。南非陷入到仇恨的循环中, 这就是最坏的政治,而白人作为种族隔离制度的受益者,对此是应该负责的。 罗莎深知即使没有得到所黑人的认可与感恩, 伯格还是会做这样的选择, 她 逐渐厘清了伯格所传递给自己的成长信条。正义不是惩罚而是恢复,不必让 事物回复到其本来面目,而是回复到理想的状态。它关注的是恢复人民的生 命,恢复和平与和谐。罗莎在小说结尾,表达了尽我所能去改变南非的渴望, 在苦难中结束苦难,"生活在一个仍然有英雄的国家是奇怪的。象其他人一样,

我尽我所能。" 认知和实践是一个不断交互、不断生发、不断深化的过程, 巴塞尔的电话促使了认知在那一刻的突破,也帮助罗莎做出伦理选择。

于是, 罗莎在护照到期之前回到了南非, 并在两周之后, 到一所黑人医 院的理疗科就职,这是罗莎出于政治正义的伦理选择,也是罗莎真正的知行 合一, "我宁愿因行动起来反对邪恶而去蹲监狱,也好过什么都不做等待着 被拘留"。罗莎按照自己的良知做出了正确的选择,在确定的"善"与"恶"、 "进步"与"落后"、"道德"与"罪恶"等一系列概念中,她的选择具备 了牢固的根基,充满了承担责任的无畏勇气, 她终于在逃离父亲之后又成为 了父亲一样的革命者,她终于从父亲那里获得了对政治正义的追求。她在一 个夏日,去拜访了姑妈一家,"空气中弥漫着夏日的气息,一切都充满了生机。 小鸟,蜻蜓,蝴蝶,蜜虫,欢快地飞舞盘旋,大雨过后,水泥建筑在早晨的 阳光下格外清新,似乎有了生命","亲近土地是如此容易"——亲近土地, 基于土地,热爱自己的家园,付诸于行动。在小说的最后,罗莎入狱,黑人 朋友弗洛拉唐纳森来探监,和小说开头14岁的少女去探监的情节形成了一个 完美的圆,但这并不是无意义的重复,一代又一代的努力,终将让南非政治 走上符合人类伦理的道路。

戈迪默通过罗莎由伦理困境到伦理选择的心路历程, 表明在种族隔离时 代的南非,如果对南非的政治现实缺乏深刻的认知,便不可能做出正确的选择。 若只是停留在知与沉思,不做出积极的伦理选择并付诸于行动,依然毫无意义, 在这片"发生大事件的土地"上,需要的是知行合一的伦理担当,这是南非 的政治正义对罗莎的内在要求,将认知转化成为行动,才能抵御政治虚无主义, 南非才有未来。"文学的首要目的不是提供娱乐,而是通过文学欣赏的方法 为人类提供道德榜样,以道德的引导丰富人类的物质和精神生活,以道德的 体验实现人类的自我完善"(Charles Ross 7-14),罗莎这一伦理选择的过程 体现出戈迪默作为严肃现实主义作家的强烈社会责任感。

#### **Works Cited**

陈红薇: "文学伦理学批评: 基于中西文化的文学批评理论创新",《文学跨学科研究》1(2021); 14-21.

[Chen Hongwei."Ethical Literary Criticism: Critical Theoretical Innovation Based on Chinese and Western Cultures." *Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature* 1(2021):14-21.]

陈礼珍: "复兴与创新:文学伦理学批评的过去、现状与未来",《文学跨学科研究》3(2019): 389-414.

[Chen Lizhen."Rejuvenation and Innovation: The Past, Present and Future of Ethical Literary Criticism." Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 3 (2019): 389-414.]

Dimitriu Ileana. "Then and Now: Nadine Gordimer's Burger's Daughter (1979) and No Time Like the

- Present (2012)." Journal of Southern African Studies 12.6 (2016): 1045-1057.
- Helgesson Stefan. "Writing in Crisis: Ethics and History in Gordimer, Ndebele and Coetzee." Research in African Literatures; Bloomington 36.3 (Fall 2005):154-55.
- Georg Lukacs. The Meaning of Contemporary Realism, London: Merlin Press, 1962.
- 聂珍钊: "文学伦理学批评:论文学的基本功能与核心价值",《外国文学研究》4(2014):8-13.
- [Nie Zhenzhao."Ethical Literary Criticism: On Fundamental Function and Core Value of Literature." Foreign Literature Studies 4 (2014): 8-13]
- ---:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年
- [—. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]
- ---: "文学伦理学批评的价值选择与理论建构",《中国社会科学》10(2020): 71-92+205-206.
- [-..."Value Choice and Theoretical Construction of Ethical Literary Criticism." Social Sciences in China 10 (2020): 71-92+205-206.]
- Ross Charles." A Conceptual Map of Ethical Literary Criticism: An Interview with Nie Zhenzhao." Forum for World Literature Studies (1) 2015:7-14.
- 尚必武: "文学伦理学批评: 伦理选择、伦理意识与伦理行动",《文学跨学科研究》1(2021): 22-30
- [Shang Biwu. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Ethical Choice, Ethical Consciousness, and Ethical Action." Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature (3)2021: 22-30]
- Taylor Charles. Atomism from Communitarianism and Individualism, Oxford UP, 1999.
- 王松林, "为诗一辩": 论文学的伦理教诲功能, 《文学跨学科研究》1(2021): 46-55.
- [Wang Songlin. "The Defence of Poesy: On the Ethical Teaching Function of Literature." *Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature* 1(2021): 46-55.]

# Being of Time vs. Clock Time: Temporal Experience of Modernity in *The Sound and the Fury*

# Zhang Shiyuan & Yang Jincai

Abstract: Modernity is saturated with a new view of time. In the twentieth century of time obsession, *The Sound and the Fury* reveals the contradiction between personal being of time and social clock time. Heidegger's philosophy of time becomes a lens to inspect modernity's perspective of time on history, capitalism and religion, revealing temporal experiences of modernity in conflict. Opposing modernity's emphasis on the present, Quentin is indulged in history and the past. Jason tries to pursue the speed of capitalism, only to find himself has fallen behind everyday life. By taking an ethical responsibility for the other, Dilsey to some extent achieves a transcendence of time, but her whole-life endurance becomes a refutation against the view of progress. In the end, Benjy, the idiot's montage-like narration exposes the ephemeral, fugitive and contingent character of modernity's time, and his feeling of space and forgetfulness creates presentness which turns out to be a direct expression of the temporal experience of modernity.

Keywords: The Sound and the Fury; William Faulkner; Time; Modernity

Author: Zhang Shiyuan is a Ph.D. candidate at School of Foreign Studies, Nanjing University (Nanjing 210046, China). Her research interests are British and American literature (Email: 13104271130@163.com). Yang Jincai is Professor of English at School of Foreign Studies, Nanjing University (Nanjing 210046, China). His research interests cover the fields of British and American literature, contemporary Chinese literature and culture (Email: jcyang@nju.edu.cn).

**标题**:存在时间与钟表时间:《喧哗与骚动》中的现代性时间体验 **内容摘要**:现代性与崭新的时间观紧密相连,《喧哗与骚动》生动体现了时间痴迷的 20 世纪背景下,个人存在时间与社会钟表时间的冲突。海德格尔的时间哲学成为透视历史、资本主义经济、宗教方面现代性时间观念的棱镜,揭示出矛盾冲突下的现代性时间体验。昆汀一反现代性时间对当下的强调,自溺于过去与历史之中。杰生看似全力追赶资本主义的时间进程,却早已在日常生活中被淘汰。迪尔西的为他性伦理打开了未来时间的超越维度,而终其一生的忍受同时成为对进步观念的反驳。最后,班吉蒙太奇式的瞬时叙述以及由空间与遗忘所营造的当下性成为现代性时间体验正面且直接的表达。 关键词:《喧哗与骚动》;福克纳;时间;现代性

作者简介: 张诗苑, 南京大学外国语学院博士生, 主要从事英美文学研究。 杨金才,南京大学外国语学院教授,主要研究英美文学、当代中国文学等。 本文系江苏省研究生科研创新项目"医疗人文与共同体:英美文学中的疫病 书写研究"【项目编号 KYCX20 0014】的阶段性研究成果。

Wyndham Lewis's seminal work Time and Western Man (1927) defines the 1920s as time-obsession under the influence of Einstein and Bergson's revolution on time theory. Though Lewis controversially polarizes space against time, he is persuasive to reveal the time machine working in the works of Proust, Joyce, Woolf, T. S. Eliot, as well as Faulkner. The variable narrative time and recurring, poetic and philosophical description of time in The Sound and the Fury (1929) confirm Sartre's remark about the novel, "Faulkner's metaphysics is a metaphysics of time" (203). Sartre emphasizes that most characters in the novel are trapped in the past, for them "the future is closed" (209). In response to Sartre, Skirry analyzes four main sections of the novel under Sartre's theory of temporality and emotions, holding that it is the emotional constellation that replaces a rational chronological ordering of events (39). Arthur Geffen categorizes the time in The Sound and the Fury into profane, sacred, and confederate dimension, analyzing its religious, historical and Southern context (180). And Deland Anderson adopts the theory of St. Augustine and Heidegger to explore Dilsey and Quentin's view of time respectively, arguing that the former "has its origin in the dawn of Christianity," and the latter "belongs to modernity's twilight" (320). Chinese scholars also notice the special position of time in Faulkner's works, related research covers narration, myth, Lacan's subjectivity theory, Bergson and Meileau-Ponty's philosophy of time. It seems that the theme of time has become commonplace to savor Faulkner's works, and some of them refer to the background of modernity; however, the temporal meaning of modernity and its association with Faulkner's time have not been interpreted systematically and thoroughly. In The Sound and the Fury, Heideggerian being of time collides with modernity's clock time, exposing opposite time perspectives on history, capitalist economy and religion. In the end, Faulkner chooses to expose the real temporal experience of modernity directly through an idiot's montage-like narration.

<sup>1</sup> The above Geffen's and Anderson's articles mention "modernity" as the prison of the white world, and its conviction of time becomes a social standard. In Wang Xiu-mei's paper "Past in Present: A Study of Modernity of Time in William Faulkner's Works", Wang considers that "past in present," Faulkner's concept of time, demonstrates "the postwar value of the Southerners and their pursuit of modern Southern spirit" (86). See more in Shandong Foreign Language Teaching 36.5 (2015): 86-91.

Modernity, perceived as a "temporal demand" (Doane 4), is about new forms of experience of time (Osborne 15). The root of the word modernity is Latin *modo*, which means "just now." Modernus, coined in the sixth century, means "now existing," and "modernity" was recorded in OED in 1672 with the meaning of "present times," all of them imply a temporal connotation. Calinescu distinguishes two kinds of modernity in Five Faces of Modernity (1987), these are the modernity as a phase in the history of Western civilization and modernity as an aesthetic concept (41). The former includes the belief in progress, science and technology, the concern with time, reason, and the ideal of freedom "within the framework of an abstract humanism," meanwhile pursuing success with the guidance of pragmatism (41). And the latter is the one that breeds avant-garde, and expresses its repulsion for the middle-class scale of values through "rebellion, anarchy, apocalypticism and aristocratic self-exile," which turns out to be a rejection of the former bourgeois modernity (42). Though the directions seem opposite, they both associate with time closely. First, modernity is a structure of historical consciousness born out of European colonialism and the world market before the development of capitalism<sup>2</sup> and it changes with time (Osborne 29). Second, the aestheticization of modernity as a "rebellion against the modernity of the philistine" works within the temporal structure of Baudelaire's and Flaubert's "newest time" (Osborne 12). In these two conflicting but intertwining categories, modernity is understood in the categories of period, quality and experience.<sup>3</sup> Modern individual undergoes an unprecedentedly complex experience of life, and the modernist culture is exactly the historical writing of such experience (Wang 10). The temporal experience of modernity coordinates with Heidegger's transformation of philosophy from pure intellect to a terrain which "meditates on what it feels like to be alive" (Eagleton 54), and it is incarnated as the being of time in contrast with the clock time regulated by the development of capitalism and the discourse of progress. Specifically, in the 1920s, the poor South fell behind the whole progress of modernity in the United States,

<sup>1</sup> There has been a quarrel between "the ancients and the moderns" since the Renaissance, and now it is replaced by a contradiction between "the moderns and the contemporaries" (Osborne 12-13).

<sup>2</sup> On the one hand, there is a widespread tendency to juxtapose "capitalism" (Marx) and "modernity" (Durkheim and Weber) as competing alternatives to interpret the same historical object (Osborne 200). On the other hand, it is agreed that modernity connects to capitalism integrally. The bourgeoisie constructs modernity in the west-centered perspective since the Enlightenment to distinguish itself from the underdeveloped and barbarian other, which is discussed by Weber, Simmel and young Lukács. This will be discussed in the second section of this paper.

<sup>3</sup> Concerning with period, Marshall Berman periodizes modernity into three phases—1570-1789, 1789-1900 and 1900 onwards (Osborne 8). And Ardono emphasizes the aspect of quality, "Modernity is a qualitative, not a chronological, category" (qtd. in Osborne 9).

even became a synonym of anti-modernity. But it is surprising that a renaissance occurred in Southern literature simultaneously, which caused a spectacle of artistic experiment juxtaposing regionalism, and cotton planting in parallel with cubism (Davis 89-91). In such contradicted and increasingly modern background, the temporal experience of modernity finds its echos in *The Sound and the Fury*, and the being of time, no matter authentic or not, encounters obstacles under the principle of modernity's clock time, showing Faulkner's disagreement with modernity in the durée of family, South, literature and life.

#### Past and Present: Getting Lost in Time

For Benjamin, modernity is essentially a destruction of tradition, accompanying with the initiation of new forms of historical consciousness. The present is a model of Messianic time, a conception of the present as the "time of the now" which lies in every side of the era (Benjamin 263). In "The Painter of Modern Life" (1863), Baudelaire argues that "by 'modernity' I mean the ephemeral, the fugitive, the contingent..." (798), and its most striking features are the impulse toward immediacy, the attempt to recognize an affective present kept in transitoriness, and the opposition to a lifeless past fettered by traditions. In his discussion on literary modernity, Paul de Man points out directly that in general understanding, history is the most fruitful enemy among the possible opposites of modernity (144). In this way, it seems that modernity characterizes itself in respect of our measuring the time as "a series of nows" (Scott 190), the new consciousness of time is to distance itself from the past and face the future. However, Quentin turns out to be a young man walking in the opposite direction from modernity to the past and history. Like a poet and philosopher of time, he compares the hands of clock as "a gull tilting into the wind," and learns from his father that as the "mausoleum of all hope and desire," clock slays time. In his short life, Quentin aims to release time from the prison of clock and pursue being<sup>1</sup> in the horizon of temporality, during which exposes a labyrinth of the past and the present and a conflict with the presentness of modernity.

Like Heidegger, Quentin treats time as the very structure of human life itself; however, his pursuit of being of time leads to a suicide under the burden of the declining honor of both his family and homeland without hope of redemption, as Satre comments that he is choked by the past and the future is closed. In Heideggerian context, death is exactly the channel that connects the past and the

<sup>1</sup> Being equals to "sein" in German, which is a copula, a revelation of the thing it represents, time is the field where the meaning of being is able to reveal.

future. Death is understood as an "ownmost nonrelational possibility not to be bypassed" (Heidegger 232). "The ending that we have in view when we speak of death, does not signify a being-at-an-end of Da-sein<sup>1</sup>, but rather a being toward the end of this being" (228). In this way, Heidegger turns upside-down the ordinary progression, according to which time moves forward, from the past to the present and then to the future.<sup>2</sup> As a being toward death, Da-sein simultaneously returns to its inmost has-been (Gewesen). "Having-been arises from the future in such as a way that the future that has-been (or better, is in the process of having-been) releases the present from itself" (Heidegger 300).3 It means that as the death in the future is certain, then the present is being in the mode of recollection or the process of having been, such as the nostalgic atmosphere and the sense of death in Proust's A la Recherche du Temps Perdu. Similarly, Quentin's section narrated in the past tense is "presented from the perspective of the end, as a return to the has-been" (Biemel 54), like Satre's being-toward-death metaphor, "This suicide is an immobile wall, a thing which he approaches backwards" (207).

Biemel reminds, "What is primary for Da-sein is not the past, but the anticipation of what is not yet in being but which is nevertheless appertains to me as my death. Only because Da-sein has the ability to anticipate, and is thus oriented to the future, is it possible for it to return to its has-been and so retain its has-been, not lose it" (54). It means that Heidegger's recollection from the future belongs to a clear and determined mind without blocking other possibilities. In opposition to a meaningless despair, "anticipation discloses to existence that its extreme inmost possibility lies in giving itself up and thus shatters all one's clinging to whatever existence one has reached" (Heidegger 244). However, Quentin's "being toward death" is extremely negative, and his progression of time in fact differs from Heidegger's. From the beginning of have been to the end of having been, Quentin experiences the world in a way that is immersed in the past rather than accessible

<sup>1</sup> Da-sein means an ideal person, an authentic existing, different from the "they", which means the ordinary people taking care of things in the inauthentic time. For Heidegger, temporality is the horizon where Da-sein shows itself. The definition of temporality is shown in note 3 on this page.

<sup>2</sup> Biemel explains, "Heidegger distinguishes between the has-been (Gewesen-sein) and the past or bygone (Vergangen-sein). The entity that exists—Dasein—is not bygone but has-been. 'Has-been' carries a suggestion of still "be-ing" (55).

<sup>3</sup> The following sentence is a definition of temporality, "We call the unified phenomenon of the future that makes present in the process of having-been temporality" (Heidegger 300).

<sup>4</sup> Faulkner said in an interview, "I feel very close to Proust. After I had read A la Recherche du Temps Perdu I said 'This is it!'—and I wished I had written myself' (72). Lion in the Garden: Interviews with William Faulkner, 1926-1962. Ed. James B Meriwether and Michael Millgate. New York: Random House, 1968.

to the future, which means the past holds the dynamic life that the future lacks. As the elder son of the declining Compsons, Quentin is locked in the past that Caddy lost her virginity and married a vulgar businessman; His family sold the remaining piece of mile to afford his education in Harvard; In the early twentieth century, the South is a place bereft of modernization and urbanization, lagging behind the national progress due to division, regionalism and poverty. For Quentin, death seems impending and imminent as enticing drives and possibilities are removed from the present and the future. Feelings, such as boredom, sadness, melancholy, and despair, which can be founded in a having-been (Heidegger 317), coexist with various temporal experiences in depression.

The presentness of modernity is not absent in the novel, but is represented by the watch, clock, chime and other measurements of time, for "The existential and temporal meaning of the clock turns out to be making present of the moving pointer. By following the positions of the pointer in a way that makes present, one counts them" (Heidegger 385), and "what is counted are the nows" (386). Quentin is morbidly indulged in listening watch and counting chimes, as the opening of Quentin's section shows, "...then I was in time again, hearing the watch" (Faulkner 50). Though Quentin knows that the "constant speculation regarding the position of mechanical hands on an arbitrary dial which is a symptom of mind-function" (51), as Ratcliffe argues that the experience of time can take several different forms in depression (115), he just cannot control himself: From his boyhood in school, "I never could come out even with the bell" (59) as a result of his disturbed clock counting, to his university period, "I was hearing my watch and I began to listen for the chimes (113). When Benjamin analyzes Baudelaire's poetry and its relation to modernity, he writes, "time becomes palpable: the minutes cover a man like snowflakes" (184). Time felt by Quentin is indeed a weight and a source of anxiety, he walks under the burden of time until he is "worn away by a minute clicking of little wheels" (51).

Clock as a handy thing has become accessible in its regular recurrence in a making present that awaits (Heidegger 380). The fact that Quentin twists the pointers off exposes what he wants to escape from is exactly the present represented by the clock; however, double ironies remain in his subsequent flee from the present. First, though the watch is broken, the "primitive" Da-sein can measure

<sup>1</sup> Handy means useful, beneficial, suitable and convenient. Only in its use rather than a theoretical observation, can a tool be encountered as what it is. A tool is closely connected to its use. "On hand" and "objectively present" are two elemental ways of being besides Da-sein, the former represents the "nearness" to being.

the shadow cast by some being available at any time, which means "Da-sein does not even need to wear a clock, it is it in a way itself" (Heidegger 382). From the dating of sun arises the "most natural" measure of time (Heidegger 379), as Quentin confesses, "The shadow of the sash was still there and I had learned to tell almost to the minute" (51), sunlight like slanting pencils casts shadows which turns out to be a natural clock for Quentin, and what he cannot help doing is "watching my shadow, how I had tricked it" (61). Second is that the present time represented by Mrs. Bland and her son Gerald, also a symbol of conceited and "noble" South, catches Quentin up (he should have been with them according to the schedule), and this leads to a collapse of Quentin who gets lost in time, considering that he is punching Dalton Ames, the man who makes Caddy pregnant, but in fact is fighting with Gerald. Quentin's lost just evidences his father's words, "...clocks slay time...time is dead as long as it is being clicked off by little wheels; only when the clock stops does time come to life" (56). However, as the little wheels of the broken watch is still clicking, Quentin seems to forget his father's advice when he accepts the grandfather's watch, "I give it to you not that you may remember time, but that you might forget it now and then for a moment and not spend all your breath trying to conquer it. Because no battle is ever won" (50). After his one-day preparation for death, listening to the watch telling its furious lie on the dark table, Quentin murmurs, "Non fui. Sum. Fui. Non sum. Somewhere I heard bells once. Mississippi or Massachusetts. I was. I am not. Massachusetts or Mississippi" (115). This monologue just exposes the sharp contrast between the past and the present, from a noble ancestry to Caddy's "degeneration," from Jeffersonian Southern superiority to the backward agricultural system and the surge of poor whites. In such disillusionment of pride and power, and in mom's complaints about defending her own family name, Quentin descends into abyss.

When Bauman says "The history of time began with modernity. Indeed, modernity is...the history of time...modernity is the time when time has a history" (110), he means that the hardware (clock, watch) replaces the wetware (the humans, the oxen or the horses) to calculate time precisely. However, ironically, it is this clock time that Quentin wants to escape from. As Benjamin's present comes to be defined as the site of "a tremendous shattering of tradition," a crisis in experience, memory and history, relations between generations are "no longer the medium of historical continuity, but of crisis, rupture, and misunderstanding. Youth is no longer a sign of apprenticeship or hope, but of an empty infinity of possibilities, disorientation and potential despair" (Osborne 135). And this turns out to be a vivid depiction of Quentin. "I walked close to the left wall when I entered, but it was empty: just the stairs curving up into shadows echoes of feet in the sad generations like light dust upon the shadows, my feet waking them like dust, lightly to settle again" (113-114), the scene bears the effect of emptiness, in which Quentin belongs to the sad generations alienated from the presentness of modernity. "...and i temporary and he was the saddest word of all there is nothing else in the world its not despair until time its not even time until it was" (118), if this murmur before Quentin's suicide is punctuated as "was/ (is) the saddest word of all," then it exactly points to the tragedy of the past, the failed pursuit of being of time, and the despairing experience of modernity's time, for "was" is a past tense of "sein."

# Capitalism and Everyday Life: Falling behind the Time

When Calinesco talks about modernity's concern about time in the context of Western civilization, he means that "A measurable time, a time that can be bought and sold and therefore has, like any other commodity, a calculable equivalent in money" (41). Marx delineates the way in which time has become the measure of value in capitalism, thus connecting commodity and labor-time. Simmel links the precision of the calculative nature of money to the precision "effected by the universal diffusion of pocket watches" (412), and claims that "technique of metropolitan life" is inseparable from a punctual practice of "a stable and impersonal time schedule" (413). Meanwhile, in Simmel's critique of modernity, anything that is valued as distinctive comes to be devalued through the levelling process of money purchase. What follows is that Lefebvre reveals modernity and capitalism's association to everyday life, with the fact that both "modernity" and "the everyday" are mainly temporal terms and derive more significations from the temporal form.

If Quentin cannot escape from the clock-time, then Jason fails to catch up with it. Heidegger discusses the calculation of time through the vulgar concept of time, which "always occurs basically in the horizon of a taking care of time that we know as astronomical and calendrical time-reckoning" (378). And the vulgar concept of time owes its origin to "a levelling down of primordial time: temporality" (Heidegger 372). Moreover, as factical Da-sein takes account of time without existentially understanding temporality, "the person who exists inauthentically loses time and never 'has' any" (Heidegger 377). Ironically, when Quentin sees the boys swimming, he yearns and presumes, "If I had time. When I have time" (90). And

<sup>1</sup> This has a coincidence with Simmel's levelling process. Heidegger also says, "The covering over contained in the vulgar concept of time and for estimating how far the ecstatic and horizonal constitution of temporality has been levelled down" (390).

Jason complains to his mother, "I never had time to be. I never had time to go to Harvard or drink myself into the ground...I can watch her (Quentin IV) during the day" (119-120). This complaint has a similarity in both structure and content with Luster's reply when Jason asks him to put a spare tire on the back of his car, "I aint had time," Luster says, "Aint nobody to watch him (Benjy) till mammy git done in de kitchen" (123). The above "watch" has a new meaning compared with Quentin's section, which adds a dimension of discipline to the subject of time, connecting to modernity's standardization and rationalization of time under social surveillance. Furthermore, it is because of Luster's refusal that the tire out of air becomes an unhandy thing in Jason's chase of Quentin IV, thus breaking the heedful association as a succession of "experiences" occurring "in time," which implies Jason's falling behind in the vulgar time.

The reckoning of time is prior to the measuring instruments, and first makes the use of clocks possible (Heidegger 371). Calculation is prominent in the process of modernity, not only because calculation aims at "in the expression that characterizes technics as modern" (Stiegler 226), but also due to its response to the precision of money economy. When Jason despises Job's earnestness about the show, he confirms "time is money" implicitly: "How about the dime or fifteen cents you'll spend for a dam two cent box of candy or something. How about the time you're wasting right now, listening to that band" (152). And Jason's calculation of time is more extreme even cold-blooded in his deliberate quibbles about the literal meaning of the phrase of time. When Caddy wants to see her daughter secretly, she promises Jason, "If you'll fix it so I can see her a minute I'll give you fifty dollars" (134). Jason charges one hundred but only lets Caddy catch a glimpse of Quentin IV who is still in the carriage from afar, then he refutes his sister's accusation, "Didn't I do everything I said? I said see her a minute, didn't I?" (135). However, Jason gets his retribution when he infuriates an old man in the chase, the latter takes out a knife and wails, "Lemme go. Lemme go just one minute. I'll show you" (202). Ironically, now it is Jason's turn to beg for more time, "Here. Here! I'll get out. Give me time, and I'll get out" (201). Modern spirit is more and more proficient in calculation, however, Jason in fact fails in measuring both time and money, in the end, he is "robbed" not only of the appropriated four thousand dollars, but also of the three thousand which he saves frugally during almost twenty years.

Meanwhile, the measurement of time brings about a making public of time (Heidegger 384). The industrial and united "one" proceeds from the watch: "The clock that one has, every clock, shows the time of being-with-one-another-inthe-world" (Stiegler 227), which means that technological time is public time, such as the impetus brought by the development of railroad and telegraph to the rationalization of time. "This publicness of time is all the more compelling, the more factical Da-sein explicitly takes care of time by expressly taking it into account" (Heidegger 377), and it is extremely conspicuous in the capitalist market. Jason is busy taking care of his telegram report to transact his share on the cotton market, but the report is always lagging behind.

He handed me a telegram. "What time did this come?" I says.

- "About half past three," he says.
- "And now it's ten minutes past five," I says.
- "...I just bought a little of it while under the impression that the telegraph company would keep me informed as to what it was doing."
  - "A report is posted whenever it comes in," he says.
- "Yes," I says. "And in Memphis they have it on a blackboard every ten seconds." (160)

The time which is made public essentially has the nature of world, as Heidegger calls the time that makes itself public in the temporalizing of temporality "world time" (380). In Stiegler's understanding of Heidegger, to calculate means to eliminate différance, all calculating anticipation amounts to looking for synchronization (225).1 The world time contains simultaneity as well, for simultaneity is a convention, which belongs to the time of modernity and time of empire. And the lagging telegraph is the symbol of both the contingent capitalist market without constancy and Jason's falling behind with modernity's time.

It is not difficult to notice that Jason's narrative rests in the temporality of everydayness, which is marked by the meals and his working time in the little shop. Different from the vulgar representation of time, "everydayness is a temporal mode of existence, which means the How in accordance with which Da-sein 'lives its day" (Heidegger 339). And the violent breakfast and supper, belated and missed dinner are metaphors of the fact that Jason even cannot catch up with the elementary progress of time. The lunch at home also results in a dispute between Jason and his boss Earl, who hopes his employee to have an instant meal for the trade is busy because of the show in the afternoon. Though Jason is treacherous enough, it still

<sup>1</sup> But Stiegler himself has a different view about calculation of time: "A time is constituted that is not 'private' but deferring and differing (différant). The calculation of time is thus not a falling away from primordial time, because calculation, qua the letter-number, also actually gives access in the history of being to any différance" (237).

exposes the logic of capitalism about working time. Ironically, it is just a little shop in the Southern town, let alone the "sure enough factory" as the Northern boy tells and the "Chicago and New York Sweatshops" in the appendix. Undoubtedly, such day will repeat again and again. Da-sein can "suffer" dully from everydayness, for "the tomorrow that everyday taking care waits for is the 'eternal yesterday'" (Heidegger 339). Lefebvre holds that the time of everyday life<sup>1</sup> can be measured in two ways: one is the cyclical temporality of nature, the other is the mechanical and rational repetition of clock time, as father's words "man the sum of his climatic experiences" (82) and Jason's mediocre life exhibit. For Lefebvre, "everyday life responds and corresponds to modernity, the one crowning and concealing the other, revealing and veiling it" (24). It means that the temporality of capital accumulation in the clothes of modernity imposes itself upon the quotidian present as repetition, both in the cyclical form of nature and labor. In this way, as a failure of everyday life, Jason is also eliminated by the time of modernity, though he has endeavored to catch up with it even in the background that everyday life can be the most oppressed place by modernity as well.

# Religion and Resurrection: Temporal Redemption of the Other

Jason's case shows one facet of modernity that "engineering common time stood where God's absolute time had been" (Scott 192). In fact, the modern age begins as a rupture with Christian society. The conflict between God and being becomes insoluble, reason defeats divinity and grows vigorously. In the aspect of time, firstly, modernity inherits the unlinear and irreversible time of Christianity, which severs the cycle and introduces finiteness and irreversibility of time, as St. Augustine insists in *The City of God* that the history of universe is "single, irreversible, unrepeatable, rectilinear, unfolding as a uni-dimensional movement in time from the creation through its centre in Jesus to the end of the world" (Patrides 5). History progresses in a linear way from the creation to the Judgement Day with the transformation of everything. This characteristic of time accentuated by Christianity paves way for modernity to "exalt change and convert it into a foundation" (Paz 17). Secondly, modernity begins as a criticism of Christian eternity. "The values of heaven and hell are transferred to earth and grafted onto history" (Paz 31). Eternity is abolished, and the future, condensed by difference, separation, otherness, plurality, novelty, evolution, revolution, history, becomes the archetype. In conclusion, as Paz says,

Though the early stage of Lefevre's critique of everyday life is influenced by Heidegger, it is different from Heidegger's everydayness. The former refers to the residual of all superior and professional activities, meanwhile, is the sum of everyone's social relationships. Heidegger's everydayness is a form of being where Da-sein can emerge, it is proposed from the view of existentialism and ontology.

modernity is ruled by the principle of change, and this historical change "adopts two forms: evolution and revolution, both have the same meaning: progress" (32). In other words, change in the name of progress replacing Christianity's eternity becomes modernity's view of time. At the time of Easter, which is around the one thousand eight hundred ninety-fifth anniversary of the day of the Lord's resurrection, Dilsey, a pious black woman, shows her temporal experience of modernity in the aspect of religion, ranging from finiteness, salvation to progress.

If the novel writes about only one character's getting old in a realistic way, it is Dilsey, from strong and vigorous to "lame" and "nearly blind." Different from Benjy with the eternally three-year-old intelligence, Quentin who tragically dies in youth, myth-like Caddy, and the bed-ridden hostess, Dilsey unfolds the journey of life as a normal person, open to the finiteness as Christianity tells. When Roskus complains about the Compsons' inauspicious house, Dilsey refutes, "Show me the man what aint going to die, bless Jesus" (20). At the beginning of novel, Caddy asks Dilsey to explain the funeral of the Damuddy twice, Dilsey both replies "You'll know in the Lawd's own time" (17). Symmetrically, near the end, after hearing the powerful sermon, Dilsey repeats "I've seed de first en de last" correspondingly twice (194), which seems to be an eventual answer to the beginning, as Isaiah 46:10 records, "declaring the end from the beginning." Dilsey believes in and accepts the irreversible time of Christianity piously and calmly.

However, different from modernity's refusal of eternity, Dilsey insists on the lasting of something. As the conversation between Dilsey and Caddy shows:

My name been Dilsey since fore I could remember and it be Dilsey when they's long forgot me.

How will they know it's Dilsey, when it's long forgot, Dilsey, Caddy said. It'll be in the Book, honey, Dilsey said. Writ out.

Can you read it, Caddy said.

Wont have to, Dilsey said. They'll read it for me. All I got to do is say Ise here (39).

At this point, what death brings is a future. The resurrection of Jesus brings an enduring world time—human's future, and this future in Dilsey's belief is not the product of Heideggerian being toward death, but Levinasian original and concrete temporality which responds to the other. Levinas offers "a phenomenology of the constitutive role of the other in human temporalization" (Osborn 117). In his view, authentic time can only stay in the relationship with the other. Considering death can never appear at the existing present, the relationship between people and death is a unique association with the future (Levinas, Time 71). Moreover, the time beyond death does not belong to me but the other, therefore, "The future is what is not grasped, what befalls us and lays hold of us. The future is the other. The relationship with the future is the very relationship with the other" (Levinas, Time 77). The aim of such time which is beyond ontology always points to the ethics as the first philosophy, thus opens another dimension to temporality through "the objectively ethical and moral examination and dialectically historical explanation of literature" (Nie, "Talks" 9). As the third-person narrative of Dilsey's section implies, Faulkner seems to endeavor to shape Dilsey as an "other," he even exposes the face of her in a defamiliarized language:

She had been a big woman once but now her skeleton rose, draped loosely in unpadded skin that tightened again upon a paunch almost dropsical, as though muscle and tissue had been courage or fortitude which the days or the years had consumed until only the indomitable skeleton was left rising like a ruin or a landmark above the somnolent and impervious guts, and above that the collapsed face that gave the impression of the bones themselves being outside the flesh. (173)

Face, in Levinasian ethics, represents a field or space where the other exposes his nakedness. The other stays in a higher position but is extremely precarious, his words are both command and crying for help, as if I, by my possible indifference, become the accomplice of his death. However, opposite to the general masterslave relationship, it is the "slave other" who makes the "ethical choice" to take responsibility for the masters' lives. Moreover, in the familial myth with animal factor of losing virginity, imaginary incest, idiot's physical instinct, hate and abuse, it is the black servant who holds the highest human factor (Nie, "Value" 74). Dilsey, an incarnation of a loving and kind mother, takes care of the whole Compsons with the elapsing of time, whose ethical identity has similarity with the Lord she believes in. Meanwhile, descendants like T. P., Frony and Luster represent the infinity of future, the posterity in this black family shows that Dilsey can "across the definitiveness of an inevitable death," prolong herself "in the other" (Levinas, Totality 282). In contrast, the Compsons turns out to be deserted, the death of Damduddy at the beginning of the novel just implies the barrenness of this white Southern family.

Dilsey can read time precisely off a one-hand clock, even when it is invisible

at night. "A cabinet clock ticked, then with a preliminary sound as if it had cleared its throat, struck five times. 'Eight oclock,' Dilsey said" (179). It seems that Dilsey is beyond Heideggerian vulgar concept of time, and achieves a Levinasian transcendence and Benjamin's Messianic exteriority. However, at the same time, it is important in this respect to remember that "Benjamin does not write of nowtime as Messianic per se, but only as a 'model' of the Messianic, site of a 'weak' Messianic power. Redemption, the reception of the fullness of the past<sup>1</sup>, does not come until Judgement Day: the end of time" (Osborne 142). For this reason, instead of the Messiah, it is Klee's Angelus Novus who sees history as "one single catastrophe," rather than a linear progress, that defines Benjamin's later view of history. A similar refusal of the progress of modernity is contained in the appendix, when Faulkner writes about Dilsey, the only three words are more powerful than other detailed descriptions, "They endured" (271). The word "endure" comes from the late Latin indurare, which means "to make hard," and the root "deru" means "to be firm, solid and steadfast." Such solidity represents not only the strong and silent character of these black people, but also a stagnation of the Southern society, where the situation of the black does not experience a fundamental change, such as the outof-time Southern "Uncle Tom" on the mule in comparison with the Northern black man in decent clothes on the bus. Faulkner sets different rates of modernity's time that the South is lagging from the North, and the back falls behind the white (Tung 145). Poverty, racial discrimination, cruel plantations and lynching are still dark shadows covering the black people, and those immigrating to the North face various obstacles as well. In this way, Dilsey's seeming transcendence of time is indeed a refutation against modernity's linear view of progress.

#### Montage and the Invasion of Space: The Real Temporal Experience of Modernity?

It is well-known that the novel's title comes from Macbeth's classical confession, "It is a tale/ Told by an idiot, full of sound and fury,/ Signifying nothing." In fact, this source is also an allegory of time if the whole speech is considered: "Tomorrow, and tomorrow, and tomorrow/ Creeps in this petty pace from day to day/ To the last syllable of recorded time,/ And all our yesterdays have lighted fools/ The way to dusty death. Out, out, brief candle!" (Shakespeare 5.5. 76). Compared with the above negative discords with modernity's time, Benjy, the fool in the novel, may represent the temporal experience of modernity in a direct way.

Osborne explains, "Benjamin's aim was to refigure the interruptive temporality of modernity as the standpoint of redemption and thereby to perform a dialectical redemption of the destruction of tradition by the new; to turn Neuzeit into jetztzeit, new-time into now-time" (115).

As Fredric Jameson claims that the transformation from modernism to postmodernism is the change from montage to collage, Benjy's section indeed reflects this technique of film, "primarily through the use of rapid, cinematic jump-cutting across time and space, linking disparate years and places through overt visual references" (Baldwin 43). Because Benjy's intelligence only equals a three-year-old child, he cannot distinguish past and present precisely, thus, in Benjy's narration, the events happening in different times often juxtapose without any transition or commentary, sometimes they are connected by the image of fire, mirror, rain and color, which achieves an effect of Eisenstein's concept of montage as dynamic juxtaposition, and a sense of eternal present. Meanwhile, montage also implies typical temporal experiences of modernity, such as instant, ephemeral and fragmentary, there are 22 timelines in Benjy's section, and the changes of time are as much as 90 times. Benjamin compares the now-time as montage which interrupts the narrative continuity of historical time. For Leo Charney, film unites modernity and a new understanding of the moment, bringing about the fact that "with the advent of increased stimuli and sensory impressions," it is increasingly difficult to grasp "even one moment fully or in its immediacy" (Lurie xv). Such shift also occurs to the structure of the novel, the narrative tradition gives way to the more complex and fractured modernity's time, as Robbe-Grillet discovers, "film and novel today meet in the construction of moments, intervals, and of sequences which no longer have anything to do with those of clocks or calendars" (151). Under such background, Benjy's transient consciousness, various narrative rhythms, remains of memory, and jumping affects are exactly the real depiction of the modern western mind (Yang 163-164).

Besides the ephemeral and fragmentary experience and presentness, montage also achieves a reconstruction of both time and space, and what is unusual about Benjy's part is that it shows an invasion of space. Though it has become a cliché to assume that modernity is about new experiences of time, and postmodernity begins a revolution in spatial relations,<sup>2</sup> the distinction is not that absolute. There is a welldesigned and symbolic symmetry at the beginning and the end of the novel in which

<sup>1</sup> As Kawin says this does not mean that Faulkner gets the idea from films, but he does something that the cinema also does. At present, there are many researches on Faulkner and film, mainly about the interdisciplinary study and Faulkner's Hollywood period. See more in Bruce Kawin. "The Montage Element in Faulkner's Fiction." Faulkner, Modernism, and Film. Ed. Evans Harrington, Ann J. Abadie. Jackson: UP of Mississippi, 1979.

<sup>2</sup> Jameson emphasizes the temporality of modernism and the spatiality of postmodernism many times: If spatiality, to some higher degree, provides us with a key to understand postmodernism, then the key term to understand modernism is temporality.

Benjy passes a Southern soldier statue in the square. In the closing plot, Benjy is out of control due to the wrong direction while passing the statue, which should be right instead of left. Eventually, Jason shows up in time to correct Luster's mistake, and the novel comes to its end with the scenery back in order in Benjy's view: "...façade flowed smoothly once more from left to right, post and tree, window and doorway and signboard each in its ordered place" (209).

Human existence, Heidegger argues, firstly is always being-in-the-world: Dasein is "in" the world. And this spatiality of being-in based on the world shows the character of de-distancing and directionality. As Da-sein has an essential tendency toward nearness, "de-distancing" means making distance disappear, and bringing the being at a distance of something near (Heidegger 97). Therefore, a carriage to cemetery brings the statue of Southern soldier as well as the historical events near, which can be seen as a metaphor for the declining South. Meanwhile, "directionality" that belongs to de-distancing is also grounded in being in the world. "Every bringing near has always taken a direction in a region beforehand from which what is de-distanced approaches so that it can be discovered with regard to its place." (Heidegger 100) In this way, left and right are not something "subjective" for which the subject has a feeling, but are "directions of orientation in a world which is always already at hand" (Heidegger 101). So Benjy's order which is from left to right is not ironic or meaningless, but reflects another approach to the temporality of Da-sein: making present brings something near from its wherefrom. "Bringing-near and the estimating and measurement of distances within what is objectively present within the de-distanced world are grounded in a making-present that belongs to the unity of temporality in which directionality is possible" (Heidegger 337). And from those spatial relations that making present constantly meets up with what is at hand (338). Thus, Benjy's experience of space is still entangled with the duration of time, emphasizing the presentness of being in the world.

However, the above making present is not the authentic Moment, which should temporalize itself out of the authentic future. Making present risks distortion and covering up, which is shown in Benjy's forgetfulness. In the appendix, Faulkner adds:

(Benjy) loved three things: the pasture which was sold to pay for Candace's wedding and to send Quentin to Harvard, his sister Candace, firelight. Who lost none of them because he could not remember his sister but only the loss of her,

<sup>1</sup> This being in the world does not mean spatiality directly but contain connotations in two aspects: first is to be familiar and to dwell existentially, second is the nature of taking care of things.

and firelight was the same bright shape as going to sleep, and the pasture was even better sold than before. (269)

Benjy's present is based on forgetting the past, and only on the basis of this forgetfulness can "the making present that takes care of and awaits retain things" (Heidegger 312). For Heidegger, forgetting is not nothing, nor is it just a failure to remember, it is rather a "positive" even ecstatic mode of having-been, making an understanding of present possible (312). Benjy's "happy" life must be on the foundation of forgetting his favorite people and things, as well as his castration so that the present can continue. More astonishingly, such forgetfulness is based on ignorance. Similarly, modernity's pursuit of presentness is also through the covering up of the have-been, sometimes such farewell to the past is a must, but sometimes it is painful even irresponsible.

Meanwhile, the Southern soldier statue itself represents a world that no longer exists, however, "what were previously innerworldly in the world and encountered as things at hand are still objectively present" (Heidegger 348). In this way, the statue contains two temporal meanings. Firstly, these innerworldly beings as such are historical and included in the history of the world (Heidegger 355). Recent years, some American states has sprung up a removal of Confederate monuments because of their implication of white supremacy and violence, in order to show the ethos of a new age. 1 Secondly, history of the world also refers to the innerworldly "occurrence" in what is at hand and objectively present (Heidegger 355), which means time also flows in the statue itself. As Bergson's durée of the inorganic substance and the continuity of physical world, now the statue becomes the experienced object, time develops in the form of consciousness. Based on the philosophical thinking of "surrounding world containing specific spatiality" and "space splitting up in places," Heidegger reminds in "Art and Space" that "Sculpture would not deal with space... Sculpture would be the embodiment of places" (qtd. in Mitchell 249). The spirit of the place embodied in some sculptural figures activates the place by incarnating its special character (Mitchell 249), and the place in the novel is obviously the South.

<sup>1</sup> The vicissitude of these statues' fate is also in the horizon of time. Most of the Confederate monuments were built in the periods of racial conflict, such as the era of Jim Crow laws (1877-1964). And the peak of the construction of Civil War Monuments occurred between the late 1890s up to 1920, during which The Sound and the Fury was written. However, in the wake of the Charleston church shooting in June 2015, some American states sprung up a removal of Confederate monuments. According to the Southern Poverty Law Center, at least 114 Confederate monuments have been removed from public spaces from 2015 to 2018. See more in Wikipedia entry "Removal of Confederate monuments and memorials".

In this way, the invasion of space not only reveals the presentness as the modern experience of time, but also wraps the South as the core with the elapse of time. Through a tale told by an idiot, Faulkner exposes the immediate, fragmentary and momentary temporal experience of modernity directly, and the South is present at any time no matter as a covered myth or a retention of history.

#### Conclusion

Modernity's time emphasizes presentness, calculation and progress. Quentin who is indulged in the past, Jason who lags behind everyday life, and Dilsey who endeavors to achieve a transcendence of time by taking an ethical responsibility for the indeed show their contradicted temporal experiences of modernity. Faulkner, however, chooses Benjy, the idiot, to expose the ephemeral, fugitive and contingent feeling of time, and the presentness brought by spatiality and forgetfulness. The fact that the underdeveloped South juxtaposes strengthening modernity, and the conservative social background is accompanied by avant-garde literature, increases the sense of paradox and division. Ironically, an idiot's tale turns out to be the reality of temporal experience of modernity in this modernist heteroglossia. In an episode about a librarian who finds a doubtful photograph which seems to be Caddy in the novel's appendix, Faulkner uses the pictorial fixation of time to breed a literary myth. "Here at six o'clock you could close the covers on it and...put it back...on the quiet eternal shelves" (267). It seems that literary narrative is treated as a firm anchor in the roaring waves of time, which can stand still in the scouring of history, society and humanity. Through the free metamorphosis of time, Faulkner creates a poetic magnificence, which is a meditation upon human's destiny and nature in an aesthetic way (Yang 164), and forges a modern capacity for experiencing, feeling, and self-critique, as Paul Ricoeur concludes, "Time becomes human to the extent that it is articulated in a narrative mode, and narrative attains its full meaning when it becomes a condition of temporal existence" (52).

#### Works Cited

Anderson, Deland. "Through Days of Easter: Time and Narrative in The Sound and the Fury." Literature and Theology 4.3 (1990): 311-326.

Baldwin, Doug. "Putting Images into Words: Elements of the 'Cinematic' in William Faulkner's Prose." The Faulkner Journal 16.1/2 (2000/2001): 35-64.

Baudelaire, Charles. "The Painter of Modern Life." Trans. Jonathan Mayne. The Norton Anthology of Theory and Criticism. Ed. Vincent. B. Leitch. New York: W. W. Norton & Company, Inc., 2001. Bauman, Zygmunt. Liquid Modernity. Cambridge: Polity Press, 2000.

- Benjamin, Walter. Illuminations. Ed. Hannan Arendt. Trans. Harry Zohn. New York: Schocken Books,
- Biemel, Walter. Martin Heidegger: An Illustrated Study. Trans. J. L. Mehta. London: Routledge & Kegan Paul, 1977.
- Calinescu, Matei. Five Faces of Modernity: Modernism, Avant-garde, Decadence, Kitsch, Postmodernism. Durham: Duke UP, 1987.
- Davis, David A. "Southern Modernist and Modernity." The Cambridge Companion to the Literature of the American South. Ed. Sharon Monteith. Cambridge: Cambridge UP, 2013. 88-103.
- De Man, Paul. Blindness & Insight: Essays in the Rhetoric of Contemporary Criticism. New York: Oxford UP, 1971.
- Doane, Mary Ann. The Emergence of Cinematic Time. Cambridge: Harvard UP, 2002.
- Eagleton, Terry. Literary Theory: An Introduction. Oxford: Blackwell Publishing, 1996.
- Faulkner, William. The Sound and the Fury. New York: W. W. Norton & Company, Inc., 2014.
- Geffen, Arthur. "Profane Time, Sacred Time, and Confederate Time in The Sound and the Fury." Studies in American Fiction 2.2 (1974): 175-197.
- Heidegger, Martin. Being and Time. Trans. Joan Stambaugh. New York: State U of New York P, 1996.
- Lefebvre, Henri. Everyday Life in the Modern World. Trans. Sacha Rabinovitch. New York: Harper & Row, Publishers, 1971.
- Levinas, Emmanuel. Time and the Other. Trans. Richard A. Cohen. Pittsburgh: Duquesne UP, 1990.
- —. Totality and Infinity. Trans. Alphonoso Lingis. Hague: Martinus Nijhoff Publishers, 1979.
- Lurie, Peter. "Introduction." Faulkner and Film. Ed. Peter Lurie and Ann J. Abadie. Jackson: UP of Mississippi, 2014. ix-xxxi.
- Mitchell, W. J. T. What Do Pictures Want?: The Lives and Love of Images. Chicago: The U of Chicago P, 2005.
- 聂珍钊: "关于文学伦理学批评", 《外国文学研究》1 (2005): 8-11.
- [Nie, Zhenzhao. "Talks on Ethical Literary Criticism." Foreign Literature Studies 1 (2005): 8-11.]
- ——: "文学伦理学批评的价值选择与理论建构",《中国社会科学》10 (2020): 71-92.
- [-.. "Value Choice and the Theoretical Construction of Ethical Literary Criticism." Social Science in China 10 (2020): 71-92.]
- Osborne, Peter. The Politics of Time: Modernity and Avant-Garde. London: Verso, 1995.
- Patrides, C. A. "Introduction: Time Past and Time Present." Aspects of Time. Ed. C. A Patrides. Manchester: Manchester UP, 1976: 1-20.
- Paz, Octavio. Children of the Mire: Modern Poetry from Romanticism to the Avant-Garde. Trans. Rachel Phillips. Cambridge: Harvard UP, 1974.
- Ratcliffe, Matthew. "Varieties of Temporal Experience in Depression." Journal of Medicine and Philosophy 37 (2012): 114-138.
- Ricoeur, Paul. Time and Narrative, Volume 1. Trans. Kathleen McLaughlin, David Pellauer. Chicago:

- The U of Chicago P, 1984.
- Robbe-Grillet, Alain. For A New Novel: Essays on Fiction. Trans. Richard Boward. New York: Grove
- Sartre, Jean-Paul. "On The Sound and the Fury: Time in the Work of Faulkner." Aspects of Time. Ed. C. A. Patrides. Manchester: Manchester UP, 1976. 203-209.
- Shakespeare, William. Macbeth. Ed. Robert S. Miola. New York: W. W. Norton& Company, Inc., 2004.
- Simmel, George. "The Metropolis and Mental Life." The Sociology of George Simmel. Trans and Ed. Kurt H. Wolff. Glencoe: The Free Press, 1950.
- Skirry, Justin. "Sartre on William Faulkner's Metaphysics of Time in The Sound and the Fury." Sartre Studies International 7.2 (2001): 15-43.
- Scott, David. "The 'Concept of Time' and the 'Being of the Clock': Bergson, Einstein, Heidegger, and the Interrogation of the Temporality of Modernism." Continental Philosophy Review 39 (2006): 183-213.
- Stiegler, Bernard. Technics and Time, 1: The Fault of Epimetheus. Trans. Richard Beardsworth, George Collins. Stanford: Stanford UP, 1998.
- Tung, Charles M. Modernism and Time Machines. Edinburgh: Edinburgh UP, 2019.
- 汪民安: 《现代性》。南京: 南京大学出版社, 2020年。
- [Wang Min'an. Modernity. Nanjing: Nanjing UP, 2020.]
- 杨金才: "《喧哗与骚动》的艺术整体感与意识流小说结构",《当代外国文学》1 (1994): 162-167.
- [Yang Jincai. "On The Sound and the Fury's Artistic Wholeness and the Structure of Stream of Consciousness Novel." Contemporary Foreign Literature 1 (1994): 162-167.

# 共同体或乌托邦:《安娜·卡列尼娜》中的跨界之旅 Community or Utopia: Travels Across Boundaries in Anna Karenina

龙瑜宬(Long Yucheng)

内容摘要:《安娜·卡列尼娜》详细呈现的两场欧洲旅行并未聚焦文化差异与冲突,而是更关注如何摆脱普遍的情感和伦理困境。旅行中的主人公们分别尝试经由宗教和艺术重建与周围世界的联系。在德国疗养的基蒂通过模仿瓦莲卡的虔诚举动超越了"本能生活"并恢复健康。而在意大利部分,随着"自由"享受爱情的弗龙斯基选择以绘画为消遣,托尔斯泰关于"什么是艺术"的思考也在文本内外同步展开。一方面,作家对与个人主义、世俗主义的兴起紧密相关的欧洲小说传统提出了挑战,"意大利旅行"这一常见爱情桥段在他笔下成了一个反高潮,将欲望置于伦理规范之上的主人公陷入了更严重的情感焦虑;另一方面,托尔斯泰还通过俄罗斯画家米哈伊洛夫展示了何为"好的艺术"。他的画作和瓦莲卡的信仰一样,让身份和立场各异的观看者深受感染,跨越所有界限形成精神的共同体。最终,托尔斯泰的现实感让小说本身充分揭示了伦理选择的复杂性,又突破了其过分强调绝对真理、主张消除差异的宗教想象和艺术论。

关键词: 托尔斯泰;《安娜·卡列尼娜》;旅行;共同体;伦理选择作者简介:龙瑜宬,浙江大学世界文学与比较文学研究所副教授、博导,主要从事俄罗斯文学和比较文学研究。本文系2018年国家社科基金青年项目"'大改革'时期俄罗斯文学中的西方旅行书写研究(1855-1881)"【项目编号:18CWW009】阶段性成果。

Title: Community or Utopia: Travels across Boundaries in Anna Karenina

**Abstract:** There are two visits to Europe presented in details in the novel *Anna Karenina*. Instead of focusing on cultural differences and conflicts, Tolstoy's prime concern is to find a way out of the universal emotional and ethical predicament. The Russian travelers try to rebuild their connections with the surrounding world through religion and art respectively. Kitty in German spa transcends her "instinct life" and recovers her health by imitating pious Varenka. In the part of travel in Italy, as Vronsky who enjoys his love with Anna at liberty takes painting as a fashionable amusement, Tolstoy's reflection on what is art unfolds both within

and above the text. On the one hand, the writer challenges the tradition of the European novel closely linked to the rise of individualism and secularism. "Travel in Italy" which is a common romantic scene is presented by him as an anticlimax. The protagonists who are actuated by desires rather than the code of ethics experience deeper anxieties. On the other hand, Tolstoy gives an example of "good art" through the Russian painter Mikhaylov, whose paintings just like Varenka's behavior infect deeply the viewers with different identities and standpoints in the novel and help them to cross all the boundaries and integrate themselves into a community. Tolstoy's sense of reality, however, makes Anna Karenina fully reveal the complexity of ethical choice and go beyond his religious imagination and theory of art which overemphasize absolute truth and advocate eliminating differences.

Key Words: Tolstoy; Anna Karenina; travels; community; ethical choice Author: Long Yucheng, Associate professor and Ph.D. supervisor at the Institute of World Literature and Comparative Literature, Zhejiang University (Hangzhou 310028, China). Her research areas are Russian literature and comparative literature (Email: pkusquirrel@163.com).

# 一、"非典型"的西方旅行书写

"旅行"贯穿于《安娜·卡列尼娜》(«Анна Каренина» 1873-1878) 整部小说。七位主要人物乘坐着传统的马车或是现代的火车在莫斯科、彼得 堡与俄罗斯中部的三个庄园之间来回穿梭,不断被打散和重组(纳博科夫 200)。除了结构性意义,这些旅行也最直观地展示了"大改革"时代(Эпоха великих реформ, 1855-1881) 帝俄景象的流动变幻。而在这些国内旅行中插入 的两次跨国之旅,即基蒂一家的德国疗养之旅(第二部三十到三十五章)和 安娜、弗龙斯基的意大利之行(第五部七到十三章)似乎并没有什么特异之处, 甚至被处理得格外顺滑流畅——小说总是直接宣告这些旅行者已经抵达目的 地多日,毫无阻碍地完成了所谓的"社会结晶"过程(257), 1安置在自己合 适的位置上了。

但如果与同时期其他俄罗斯作家的西方旅行书写加以比照,这种"顺当" 本身就非常特别: 克里米亚战争的失利与亚历山大二世现代化改革带来的震 荡让俄罗斯民族意识变得极为微妙(津科夫斯基 110);因战时旅行禁令的 废除、铁路和护照系统的完善以及现代旅游业的发展而变得空前繁荣的欧洲 旅行很自然地成为了一个牵动多方政治文化力量的公共议题。各派知识分子、 作家纷纷通过相关书写与"西方"这一关键他者直接对话,展开现代性想象

<sup>1</sup> 托尔斯泰:《安娜·卡列尼娜》,见《列夫·托尔斯泰文集》第9-10卷,周扬等译。北京: 人民文学出版社,2013年。文中所引小说译文均随文标注页码,不再另加说明。

和民族身份建构(Layton 848-856)。无论是陀思妥耶夫斯基《冬天记的夏天 印象》(«Зимние заметки о летних впечатлениях» 1863)、《赌徒》(«Игрок» 1866)中那类蔑视西方之庸俗堕落的孤傲反叛者,还是屠格涅夫《国外来信 (第一封信)》(«Из-за границы. Письмо первое» 1857)、《烟》(«Дым» 1867) 中面对文明"中心"畏缩自卑而缺乏创造力的"外省人",都渗透着 同样浓重的身份焦虑。

在这一时期也两度(1857、1860-1861年)前往西欧诸国旅行的列夫•托 尔斯泰对这类议题并不陌生。但还在其旅行日记以及以旅行经历为基础写成 的短篇小说《卢塞恩》(«Люцерн» 1857)中,他就有意识地与旅行书写范式 拉开距离,淡化俄罗斯旅行者身份的特异性(Gooding 396)。而到了直接取 材俄罗斯当代生活的《安娜·卡列尼娜》,在安排自己的主人公前往西方旅 行时,托尔斯泰同样无意让他们过分纠结于"民族性"问题。诚然,他笔下 那些俄罗斯贵族长期接受的精英教育、充足的金钱与时间本身就使得这些人 物能够更顺利地跨越文化、语言界限,融入西方旅行地。他们不可能像陀思 妥耶夫斯基笔下的"被侮辱与被伤害者"那样感受文明的冲击。备受游客青 睐的意大利名胜"对于弗龙斯基这样一个聪明的俄国人"并没有什么"不可 言喻的意义"(554);但需要马上指出的是,小说也并未用那种在俄罗斯知 识界流行已久的、以精英化和西方化为实质的"世界主义"姿态直接绕过旅 行中遭遇的"俄罗斯与西方"问题(Offord 107-113)。面对西方,谢尔巴茨 基老公爵夫妇的态度构成了有趣对比: "竭力想装得像一位西欧的夫人"的 公爵夫人难免"矫揉造作,很不自在"(272);相反地,能讲一口"现在很 少人能够讲的那样优美的法语"的公爵(277),保持着几乎有些粗野的莫斯 科做派。身处西方,他呈现出一种引人注目的放松状态,这反而为他赢得了 普遍的好感和尊敬。当他在旅馆的花园里一边大吃特吃,一边当着主人的面 以诙谐语气调侃德国人的精明、刻板时,引发的不再是同类书写中那种严厉 的价值判断,而是满堂欢笑(Foster 23)。

换言之,民族间的差异确实存在,但不再是一个困扰人物的核心问题, 也并未成为作品关注的焦点。事实上,老公爵面对西方的这种自信和放松, 托尔斯泰在此前的《战争与和平》(«Война и мир» 1863-1869)中就已想象 性地赋予了19世纪初期的俄罗斯人。对法战争的胜利在很大程度上保证了这 一文化心态的"逼真",哪怕其并不符合历史实情(汤普逊 108-109)。但在《安 娜·卡列尼娜》这部聚焦当代生活的小说中,这种从容已经变得不那么容易 保持: 在持续数年的创作过程中, 托尔斯泰一直紧密关注变革引发的社会矛 盾与伦理危机,并不断将最新时政纳入作品(巴特利特259)。在小说的国内 部分,除了女性解放、婚姻制度变革外,农业经营的新模式、地方自治的推进、 大学的论战以及城市和铁路网的快速扩张等等,不仅仅是作为人物活动的背 景存在,更时时成为他们激烈论辩和苦苦思索的问题。即使是老公爵,出国 旅行前也被医生给女儿治病时采取的那种有违传统性别规范的新式疗法大大 激怒,却又无可奈何(142)。时移境迁,相较于1812的军事入侵,大改革 中新思想、新伦理的侵袭更难抵御。

这也使得小说两次跨国旅行中那种四海如家的平顺从容显得更为特异: 恰恰是当笔触直接转向西方这一俄罗斯改革模板时,现实的焦灼突然褪去。 小说中有一处"留白"颇能说明问题——比起详加描绘的德、意之旅,列文 的欧洲考察之旅被简略带过, 甚至很难被读者注意到。在小说第三部最后, 认为在农民与土地问题上俄罗斯不能照搬西方模式的列文决定出国"搜集确 凿的证据"(409)。但到了第四部第七章再次出场时,列文已经回到莫斯科 的旅馆,读者仅被告知他在普鲁士、法国和英国都待过,"看到了不少新奇 的东西",很高兴"走了这一趟"(446)。从小说列文这条叙事线的庞杂以 及承载的探索使命来看,恐怕很难完全用结构需要来解释这种语焉不详。曾 亲赴欧洲诸国考察的作家也不缺乏相关素材来进行这部分的写作。但无论如 何,小说从略处理了最可能直接触及俄罗斯与欧洲具体比较及冲突的这一趟 旅行。而如前所述,在作者详写的两次旅行中,也摈弃了关于民族差异的程 式化描写;不止如此,它们还最大限度地超越了具体时空:基蒂部分,我们 看到的是一个聚集了不同国籍和阶层的病人、笼罩在死亡阴影下的疗养地; 安娜和弗龙斯基出现时已经不在威尼斯、罗马和那不勒斯,而只是"意大利 一个小市镇"(546)。作者不仅没有安排他们游览名胜, 甚至也没有透过他 们的眼睛展示什么地方风物。如下文将揭示的,这个意大利市镇更像是欧洲 文明历史的一个抽象符号。依凭这样的时空设置,小说尝试追问一些普遍性 的精神与伦理命题,并对可以囊括所有人群的"世界性共同体"展开想象, 以此克服因改革而凸显的差异、分裂。这种尝试及其间的悖论,正可以有力 揭示托尔斯泰这时期在思想和艺术方面的独特探索。

# 二、爱人者与背德者

基蒂的疗养发生在她被弗龙斯基背弃, 无法面对社交界、家庭乃至自我 之时; 而在展开意大利之行之前, 安娜与弗龙斯基都刚从死神之手侥幸逃脱 ——安娜险因分娩丧命,病榻前她与丈夫短暂和解,回归家庭,弗龙斯基则 是因贵族荣誉受损,羞愧之下试图自杀。这两次死亡毋宁说代表了他们与社 会规范联系最紧密的时刻。而在完成了这种准献祭后,两人最终选择不再承 担伦理责任,前往异域自由地享受所谓个人生活。和旅行中的基蒂一样,他 们与原有生活的疏离此时达到了顶峰。但随着情节的发展,这两组人物分别 找到了自己的"再融入"方案,两条叙事线的走向更形成了巧妙对照。

疗养地为基蒂揭示了肉体的脆弱速朽, 其个人情感纠纷不再显得那么沉 重。在新结识的施塔尔夫人和瓦莲卡小姐的引导下,她逐渐意识到在自己一 直沉湎的"本能生活"之外,还有一种由宗教显示的"精神生活":它无关 具体仪式和经文、只诉诸于普遍情感,"人不仅能够按照吩咐相信它,而且 也能够热爱它"(268)。和疗养地以疾病、死亡的绝对公平突破了身份界限 一样,这个宗教世界也无关教派差异。神秘的施塔尔夫人("谁也不知道她 的信仰是什么——天主教呢,新教呢,还是正教",264)告诉基蒂,"在人 类的一切悲哀中,只有爱和信仰能够给予安慰"(269)。固然,基蒂很快发 现施塔尔夫人的言行并不一致,但默默忍受后者之虚伪的瓦莲卡却以一种更 生动的方式展示了这种信仰的力量。

小说花了不少篇幅铺陈瓦莲卡的暧昧身份:这是一位自幼接受西方教育 的俄国姑娘,她出身下层,却在贵族家庭长大,就连其顶替夭折新生儿的"养女" 身份也是半亲缘性的(263-264)。瓦莲卡并未因为这种身份的模糊而陷入自 我认知的分裂,相反,她选择将之转化为一种打破人为隔阂、无限拥抱周围 世界的可能。她以真诚而不受拘束的态度为疗养地一切有需要、而非有合适 身份的人服务。这位"完美无缺的人物"也很快成为了基蒂效仿的对象(269)。 尤其重要的一点是, 瓦莲卡在疗养地对尼古拉 • 列文与玛丽亚 • 尼古拉耶夫 娜的帮助,还预表了小说第五部中基蒂照顾临死前的尼古拉这一经典情节。 这种超出事件表面因果关系的联系也暗示了一种更深刻和普遍的精神秩序的 存在:尼古拉病倒的那个省城旅馆,因为过往住客而"到处都是污浊、尘埃、 零乱,同时还带着那种现代化、自满的、由铁路带来的忙乱气氛"(582), 俨然是疗养地/永恒的苦难世界的一个俄罗斯版本——与此前老公爵对疗养 地的反应(273)几乎完全一样,基蒂、康斯坦丁·列文这样拥有健康灵魂的 人格外敏感地发现了旅馆的种种不和谐(582)。而即使是在这两个足够混杂 的空间中,玛丽亚都仍然因为其妓女身份而被孤立。无论是疗养地的其他客人, 还是旅馆中的列文兄弟,都对她的存在顾忌重重。但在疗养地面对她与尼古 拉的困境, 瓦莲卡"第一个挺身出来解围", 她的热情感染了当时的观察者 基蒂(261)。在第五部中,收到玛丽亚来信的基蒂将完全复制这一积极回应 和感染他人的过程。如她向深受感动的新婚丈夫承认的, 自己对不幸者的妥 善照顾(这不仅需要技巧,更需要一种充分移情的能力)得益于她"在苏登 学了不少"(592)。人物行为和体验的重复,让小说这两部分中人与上帝、 人与人合而为一的福音书色彩同时得到强化。通过瓦莲卡代表的这种精神力 量的传递,处于不同社会位置与生命阶段的人物们在苦难之地凝聚成了一个 小小共同体,就连基蒂与列文婚后首度出现的隔膜也赖此得以消融(599)。 而此前跟随瓦莲卡领悟"爱和信仰"的过程,显然也是基蒂本人的治愈之旅 ——与对新派医生的喜剧化刻画相呼应,小说丝毫未提及她在疗养地接受的 医学治疗。她真正需要的是与周围世界、与自己的和解,是找到未来进行伦 理选择时可以依凭的尺度。尽管对看到的那个精神世界不无疑问(下文还将 讨论这一点), 当学会如何爱人、恢复生命活力的基蒂踏上归途时, 她已不 再只是一位以个人情事为生活之全部的贵族小姐,"她的莫斯科的忧愁已经 成为过去的回忆了"(284)。

如果说基蒂旅行的主题是"疾病一宗教",那么安娜、弗龙斯基意大利 之旅的主题就是"爱情一艺术"。摆脱伦理束缚后两人第一次尽情享受独处 时光。按照纳博科夫对整部小说时间进度的细致梳理,相较于基蒂精神觉醒 部分的缓慢推进, 意大利之旅处于一种高速透支状态(纳博科夫199), 两位 私通者的情感线在上扬到顶峰的同时也开始出现下挫的不祥征兆:安娜压制 了关于自身"罪恶"的记忆,抱着一种孤注一掷的激情,她面对弗龙斯基"感 到不可饶恕地幸福",但也空前自卑脆弱(552-553);同样,当"渴望了那 么久的事情"如愿以偿,弗龙斯基发现自己的选择并未带来幸福,"他不久 就感到他愿望的实现所给予他的,不过是他所期望的幸福之山上的一颗小砂 粒罢了"(553)。而仅仅是为了让自己不因失去"愿望和目的"而陷入苦闷, 弗龙斯基开始进行绘画创作,并满足于对各种流派、尤其是"优美动人的法 国派"的模仿(554)。诚如研究者早已指出的,在其信奉的"自由的爱情" 与"消遣的艺术"之间存在一种平行关系,二者同样缺乏与生活的深刻联系 以及相应的责任意识(Bayley 235)。唯此,在搬进别墅、进一步沉湎于个人 世界时,弗龙斯基才能毫无阻碍地将这二者同时融入到自我想象中:他幻想"本 人就是一个谦虚的艺术家,为了自己所爱的女人,而把世界、亲戚、功名心 一齐抛弃"(555)。

但"爱情-艺术"成为意大利之旅的主题、尤其是小说在这部分还出现 了关于真伪艺术的大量讨论,或许并不只是受作品内部逻辑的推动。托尔斯 泰的一个潜在对话对象,正是"小说"(novel/poмaн)这一钟爱描绘弗龙斯 基幻想的那类浪漫形象、安娜热衷阅读而作家本人也正在写作的文体——尽 管(或者说正因为)俄罗斯在短短几十年里"叠缩"了西方几代文学积累, 在写作过程中对文学的一些根本问题展开追问,成为黄金时代俄罗斯作家的 一种惯例(Meyer 9)。创作《战争与和平》时,托尔斯泰就已在思考小说的 意义与局限, 并坚称其写作的并非"欧洲人所理解的那种含义上的长篇小说", "即有开端,有不断复杂起来的趣味以及大团圆的结局或者不幸的收场的那 种小说"(托尔斯泰《文论》12)。而《安娜·卡列尼娜》才是他眼中自己 的"第一部"小说(托尔斯泰《书信》130)。比起《战争与和平》,这部作 品更加遵循当时的现实主义小说规范, 叙事更为冷静中立, "结构更要'欧化' 得多,谨严得多,故事的展开也紧张得多。主题跟十九世纪欧洲小说的主题 有更密切的类似之处"(卢卡契570)。然而,也正因为空前深入小说传统内 部,托尔斯泰反而更强烈地感受到个人创作之精神、伦理诉求与它的不协调: 《安娜·卡列尼娜》的双线结构很大程度上就是作家与欧洲、尤其是英法小 说传统自觉对话的结果。确定要写作一部"小说"的托尔斯泰一开始进展神速, 初稿也基本符合私通小说中的爱情三角程式: 但随着写作的推进, 作者日益 陷入痛苦的自我否定之中,作品被认为是"枯燥庸俗"的,需要"尽可能快 地脱手"(托尔斯泰《书信》139)。为了写出一些能真正给人力量、触及更 高精神法则而非只是带来"罪恶的欢乐"的东西,他不断调整小说重心,直 到 1875年 10 月, 才自认找到搭建作品世界观和结构的"支架"(托尔斯泰《书 信》140)。这当然最突出地反映在成稿中列文形象的大大丰富——这位自传 性人物的不倦探索让作品笼罩在福音书与卢梭思想的理想光辉之下,那些"庄 严、深邃而全面的内容"与欧洲小说传统背靠的个人主义与世俗主义形成了 有力对冲 (Эйхенбаум 186-187); 但不言而喻,对小说传统的这种挑战同样 渗透到了安娜、弗龙斯基这条线索之中。在欧洲小说中往往被处理为浪漫爱 情之高潮的"意大利(蜜月)旅行"情节1实际上就成为了《安娜·卡列尼娜》 中的"反高潮"所在。

如梅耶 (Priscilla Meyer) 犀利地指出的,安娜的旅行算得上是《包法利夫 人》(Madame Bovary 1857)中爱玛根据其阅读的那些流行小说展开的意大 利幻想的"高配版":相较于爱玛,安娜没有经济方面的压力,其情人也远 比罗多尔夫忠贞, 甚至还拥有爱玛向往的那种真正的贵族身份。但即使是在 这种"最理想"的状态下,两位私通者仍然未被作者许以任何幸福的保证(Meyer 182)。与此同时,面对19世纪中叶以降现实主义小说"题材带来的单调乏 味状态和道德虚假性",托尔斯泰对自己的主人公也并未采取福楼拜那种近 乎冷酷的嘲讽态度(斯坦纳 21)。在"意大利旅行"这个最放纵、最接近私 通小说原型的时刻,如前所述,地方风物——它们构成了爱玛幻想中的主要 浪漫元素(福楼拜221-222)——几乎完全隐退,更具普泛意义的人物心理得 到充分呈现。无论是否愿意向自己承认,获得所谓"自由"的安娜与弗龙斯 基仍在被超出感官愉悦的一些更深层次的需求困扰,因为"人们把幸福想象 成欲望实现的那种永恒错误"而失去平静(553)。与混淆了物质享受和精神 愉悦的爱玛不同,两位俄罗斯情人尚未完全失去辨识真伪善恶和自省的能力。 他们的空虚与焦虑证明了纯粹欲望的满足并不能提供生活所必需的意义。正 是对善的永恒追求,让人类可以且必须在对伦理规范的遵从中感受到更高意 义上的自由, 实现精神的圆满。

比《安娜·卡列尼娜》稍早的英国小说《米德尔马契》(Middlemarch 1874)为我们提供了另一个绝佳的比较对象:托尔斯泰与乔治•艾略特的这 两部作品经常被研究者并举。而恰恰是在意大利旅行部分,二者的对话关系 变得异常明显和紧张(Blumberg 567-568)。蜜月旅行中的多萝西娅开始对自 己的婚姻感到失望,并与后来的真爱相遇;这一故事线在《安娜·卡列尼娜》 中沿着相反的方向展开,在浪漫激情变得可疑的同时,安娜决意背弃的婚姻 以及相应伦理责任所具有的神圣性和稳定力量开始浮现(在意大利旅行前,

<sup>1</sup> 从18世纪开始,对意大利游历的描述就在西方形成了强大传统,"摆脱约束的浪漫爱情" 以及"欧洲历史与艺术的博览"都是其中常见的主题。参见博马雷德: "意大利之旅堪比人生 之旅——论 18 世纪和 19 世纪的赴意大利游历", 《艺术史研究》12(2013): 118-128。

小说详细描绘的正是列文与基蒂的婚礼)。当然,这种比较是极度简化的。 F.R. 利维斯曾准确地指出两位作家在气质上的相通之处, "一种强烈的对于 人性的道德关怀"造就了两人作品的"非凡真实性"(利维斯 163)。对于多 萝西娅的婚姻和安娜的私情,两位作家同样投入了足够的同情,表现出对人性、 生活之复杂性的洞察。但即使都拥有利维斯所说的博大智识,并且都选择将 个人生活放置于变革中的公共生活中加以考察,托尔斯泰与艾略特对"生活" 的看法终究有明显分歧: 艾略特聚焦的是 19 世纪 20 年代末、30 年代初的英 国, 勃兴的现代文明在封闭保守的外省遭遇阻滞; 而托尔斯泰在描写因 19 世 纪下半叶的大变革而陷入震荡的俄罗斯时,已有了更充分的时间与空间距离 对现代文明本身提出质疑。事实上,在两部小说中,意大利都不仅仅是浪漫 爱情的象征,借用《米德尔马契》中威尔的评论,它代表着一种(欧洲)"历 史整体感"(艾略特 255)。身处其中,托尔斯泰笔下的人物所感受和展示的 不仅不是民族与地方的差异, 反而是文明谱系的共通。无论是中世纪基督教 文明(如久居于此的戈列尼谢夫向弗龙斯基强调的,俄国是"拜占庭的后代", 550),还是文艺复兴以来的世俗化传统,俄罗斯都深深卷入其中。但如果说 在《米德尔马契》的意大利"爱情一艺术"之旅中,通过一种带有强烈浪漫 主义色彩的想象,感官满足与精神升华得以完美结合,1那么,在《安娜·卡 列尼娜》中凸显的则是二者的严重失谐。且不说弗龙斯基与安娜孤注一掷的 越轨行为,当他尝试通过以中世纪题材进行创作(555)和改换着装(569) 来想象性地融入那个宗教时代时,他也只是在进行一种源自"享受"而非"需 要"的模仿,而这与后来多莉造访其府邸时注意到的他与安娜对家庭生活的 那种做作模仿如出一辙(Bayley 235-236)。毫不奇怪, 与其对爱情的迷醉一样, 弗龙斯基浅薄的复古癖也随着其兴趣的转移而迅速消退。

不宜夸大托尔斯泰对现代变革的拒斥或对中世纪文明的留恋: 2 但相较于 西方同行,俄罗斯作家托尔斯泰对现代文明带来的负面影响确实有着更深重、 也更现实的忧虑。毕竟,他正在目睹这一已在西方造成恶果(在自己的欧洲 旅行中他对此深有体会)的文明如何快速跨越民族文化边界、将俄罗斯笼罩 其中。与瓦莲卡、基蒂选择拥抱一个以爱与同情凝聚的精神共同体形成鲜明 对比,安娜与弗龙斯基放弃了对超越性存在的信仰,他们的伦理选择完全以 欲望的满足为指向,而欲望的不可持续和易变使得两人的结合注定是不稳定 的, 甚至带来了更严重的孤立。固然, 私通悲剧在任何时代和社会都可能上演,

<sup>1</sup> 博物馆和画室中的多萝西娅被呈现为"具有基督教精神的古典美女——基督教的安提戈涅, 在强烈的宗教情绪控制下的美感实物"(艾略特229)。而这一形象在威尔心中激起的,也是 一种精神与爱欲和谐统一的体验(艾略特 261)。与《安娜·卡列尼娜》一样,《米德尔马契》 中的艺术与爱情主题构成了平行关系,不同的是,多萝西娅与威尔的结合最终被作家处理得既 饱含情感又合乎更高法则, 理想美满。

<sup>2</sup> 事实上,中世纪的"教会的基督教"与托尔斯泰理想中的"真正的基督教"相去甚远。参见 托尔斯泰《文论》160-162。

但情感、私密关系被尊为一种几乎排他的价值,而调和"自然、家庭、社会、 宗教以及超越性领域"的婚姻反而变成需要为之艰难辩护的对象,这无疑折 射出了时代的巨变,原有宗教一伦理秩序受到了空前冲击(Meyer 153)。割 断一切传统纽带、前往意大利尽情享乐的两位背德者,与他们接受的那些时 髦的艺术──除了法国绘画,还有主角总能得到"英国式的幸福"的小说(122) ——一起, 走向了一个危险的新世界。

# 三、"感染"的艺术

正是作为与上述现代精神的一种对抗,小说的意大利旅行部分还描绘了 另一个精神气质截然不同的世界,它通过米哈伊洛夫的创作向众人展示:弗 龙斯基一行参观了这位同胞的画室,随后又邀请其为安娜作画。当小说详述 绘画和赏画过程、展示静态画面时, 高速推进的时间线(以及与之对应的两 位主人公激情的消耗)似乎也得以相对放缓。而通过在小说《安娜·卡列尼娜》 中刻画另一位"安娜"(画像)的创造者,托尔斯泰更获得了一个后退一步 打量自身创作的绝佳机会。事实上,学界公认,在这部分描写中已经可以找 到后来其激进宣言《什么是艺术?》(«Что такое искусство?» 1898)中的一 些核心命题(Grossman 8)。

而就本文论题而言,尤其重要的是小说中米哈伊洛夫三幅画作引起的不 同反应。身份悬殊且观点迥异的安娜、弗龙斯基、戈列尼谢夫与画家汇聚于 异乡,临时组成了一个鉴赏小组,同一画作激起的情感或想象,让各人隐秘 的内心世界不同程度地向其他人敞开,相互发生碰撞或交融。这种接受情况 牢牢占据了小说叙事的焦点,对它的交代不仅总是先于对画作本身的描绘, 其精细程度也超过后者。这种"受众导向"让我们有理由相信,除了将这些 片段笼统归入"图说"(Ekphrasis)传统(Mandelker 2),更应将之与俄罗 斯艺术背靠的神秘主义传统勾连起来:形象也好,语言也罢,都被认为是传 达普遍、永恒价值的一种符号,承担着神圣使命。因此,它们的内在意义总 是先于形式本身,并必须通过唤起受众的精神与情感体验得到实现:受众完 成的也不是现代意义上的审美活动,而是一种关乎精神生长的"祈祷"活 动(徐凤林 25),或者说就是一次伦理选择。在《什么是艺术?》中托尔斯 泰甚至将断言,能够让更多接受者分享真理、实现聚议性的作品才是好的艺 术,并进而高呼"世界性的艺术"(всемирное искусство),将"感染力" (заразительность)、也即"在感受者的意识中消除他跟艺术家之间的界限, 不仅仅是他跟艺术家之间的,而且也是他跟所有领会同一艺术作品的人之间 的界限"的能力推举为检验艺术价值的标准(托尔斯泰《文论》245)。艺术 就此成为了一种关乎伦理的交流行为。而在《安娜·卡列尼娜》意大利之旅 的三次常画中, 众人受到的感染依次递增, 这应该也是一直对自己小说创作 之意义存有极大疑虑的作家苦心设计的结果。

引人注目的是,作为一种类宗教体验的"感染"并不依赖于宗教题材。 进入画室后众人欣赏的第一幅画,也即福音书题材的"彼拉多的告诫"反而 是三幅画作中最缺乏动人力量的。三位客人很快将目光从画面移开,充当起 评论家的角色,驾轻就熟地说出了打动自己的某处细节。这些评论都是"在 基督的画像中可以找到的无数的正确见解之一",但也都"无关轻重"(563)。 而当戈列尼谢夫与画家就应该把基督画成"神人"还是"人神"、"争议性 是否会破坏艺术感受"展开论辩时,与对许多情节的处理一样,作者选择遵 循小说规范,暂时隐藏自己的立场 (Эйхенбаум 186-187),克制评论的插入, 而限于对人物言论的直接引用。一方是缺乏对生活之深刻体认,观念保守而 捍卫正统宗教思想的戈列尼谢夫,另一方则是"在无信仰、否定一切、唯物 主义的见解中培养出来"(517)的思想激进、但无疑拥有艺术热忱的画家, 其实很难判定作者在这场争论中更偏向哪一边。固然, 现实生活中托尔斯泰 与画家克拉姆斯科伊 (Иван Николаевич Крамской 1837-1887) 、格 (Николай Николаевич  $\Gamma$ e 1831-1894) 的交往能够提供一些解读线索, <sup>1</sup>但无论如何,和 这幅画作带来的效果一样,小说印象的统一被打破。

而转向第二幅垂钓图时,无论是画作还是小说叙事本身都更有力地作用 于自己的接受者。透过弗龙斯基等人一系列近乎忘我的接受反应, 读者清晰 而强烈地感知到,这是一幅具有巨大感染力的佳作。它所表现的,也正是托 尔斯泰日后在《什么是艺术?》中予以肯定的"全世界所有的人都能理解的、 日常生活中最朴质的感情"(托尔斯泰,《文论》255)。当众人开始好奇画 面中那位用"沉思的碧蓝眼睛凝视着水面"的小孩"在想什么"时,他们已 经在不知不觉中选择从高势位的评论者转为真正的共情者(566)。可惜,在 回家的路上,弗龙斯基等人又习惯性地回到精英主义立场,用"才能"和"修 养"来解释米哈伊洛夫的成就,此时的作者终于忍不住现身讽刺。他宣布这 些人是在讨论自己"毫不理解、却又要讨论的东西"(567)。在其看来,对 比真正的艺术家米哈伊洛夫,一味模仿前人创作的弗龙斯基所不理解、或者 缺乏的,显然不是才能或修养,而是对生活的真诚信念:他不是直接从生活 本身得到灵感,从未在真实或想象中亲身经历过自己所创造的;相反,小说 中,画家总是在不断"吞咽"生活的印象,并在调取这些日常经验进行创作时, 继续真诚地表达所见, 而非刻意营造某种刺激性效果。

小说中的第三幅画, 也即米哈伊洛夫应邀前往别墅给安娜绘制的画像,

<sup>1 1873</sup> 年,正在写作《安娜·卡列尼娜》的托尔斯泰同意克拉姆斯科伊为其画像。他与这位 彼得堡新派代表在创作方面颇有共鸣,但思想观念存在明显分歧。相关经历也被挪用到小说的 这部分描写之中;而 1890 年画家格完成的同样以彼拉多的审问为题材的《什么是真理》受到托 尔斯泰的热烈称颂,原因正在于画作表现了一个具有普遍意义、无可争议的主题。参见托尔斯 泰《书信》226-227。如据此判断,尽管托尔斯泰更接受基督的人性而非神性,《安娜·卡列尼娜》 中戈列尼谢夫这一人物也远不如米哈伊洛夫讨喜,但在两人的辩论中,后者认为只要有一部分 人可以理解对基督的历史化处理即可的看法未必就完全代表了作家本人的观点。

达到了感染力的顶峰,也进一步揭示了真、伪艺术的差异。此时,身份、个 性以及艺术观念的差异已经让画家与弗龙斯基等人的关系变得更为紧张,甚 至"分明怀着敌意",哪怕对安娜抱有好感,"他却避免和她谈话"(568-569)。 但画家的创作最终却战胜了这种分裂,表达出了所有人认为本就潜藏于己心 的某种东西:

从坐下来让他画了五次以后,这画像就使得大家,特别使弗龙斯基 惊异了,不只是以它的逼真,而且也是以它那特殊的美。米哈伊洛夫怎 么会发现了她特殊的美,这可真有点奇怪。"人要发现她最可爱的心灵 的表情,就得了解她而且爱她,像我爱她一样。"弗龙斯基想,虽然他 自己也是由于这幅画像才发觉她的最可爱的心灵的表情的。但是那表情 是这样真切,使得他和旁人都感觉到好像他们早就知道了似的。(568)

可以看到,画家的成功一方面不能完全离开画像的"逼真"——在统一 的宗教语境已经不复存在、"快乐的自然主义和现实主义"统治审美的时代, 这种逼真有助实现"外部直观性和普遍可理解性"(徐凤林 242);另一方面, 激进的米哈伊洛夫在创作过程中更选择超越其否定主义立场,从孤独隔绝的 状态中走出来,向他人敞开,真正地去"了解和爱"自己的对象。但作品的 写实也罢, 艺术家的真诚也好, 感染论成立的基石仍然是承认普遍的、可共 同分享之物的存在,而这正是托尔斯泰眼中那些"消遣"的艺术及其所表征 的现代精神所弃绝的。小说多次提及画家如何在创作中"剥去"那些使得对 象的内在本质"不能清楚显现出来的遮布"(559),也即提炼和超越零碎的 日常表象,进入到一个更高的世界。这被描绘为一个自然而又神秘、带有强 烈新柏拉图主义色彩的过程(Mandelker 7)。与正教的圣像画一样,这幅画 像所揭示的"特殊的美"不仅可以为受众普遍感知,更反过来提升、重塑了 后者对现实的认识。毫不奇怪,面对米哈伊洛夫的创作,弗龙斯基中止了自 己的安娜画像创作,虽然它看起来"更像名画",却"是多余的了"(569)。 而这也已预告了他与安娜恋情的不得圆满,小说"爱情"与"艺术"主题的 呼应关系在此变得异常明显: 止步于感官表象的弗龙斯基无法洞察安娜的心 灵, 也无法像真正的创造者那样赋予其持久的生命。

事实上,小说第七部还将借列文之口对"认为不撒谎就是诗"的法国自 然主义创作进行正面批评(828)。而发表这番评论前,登门拜访安娜的列文 刚刚见证了米哈伊洛夫画作的惊人力量——研究者注意到,这是小说两位中 心人物第一次、也是唯一一次见面,而安娜的画像恰在此时再次出现,并成 为两人精神交融的关键中介。套用托尔斯泰本人对小说结构的形容,画像成 为了聚拢两根拱柱(即两条叙事主线)的那块拱顶石(Grossman 6)。这一 崇高位置再次强化了画像的"圣像"意味,哪怕它实际悬挂于安娜与弗龙斯

基那座光线暧昧、多少带有堕落意味的住所。在对画像的长久凝视中,列文 这位一直表现得过分自尊、共情能力不足的精神探索者进行了一种新的伦理 选择,开始"凭借本能而非理性推演"来理解人生(Mandelker 13)。在来访 的路上还对安娜的堕落报以"讽刺地冷笑"的他,逐渐"看到"了安娜的精 神世界,洞察到她处境的"辛酸苦辣",甚至对其"产生了一种连他自己都 觉得惊讶的一往情深的怜惜心情" (830-831)。这种同情也让已经被社交圈 彻底孤立的安娜感受到久违的温情。可以说,托尔斯泰借米哈伊洛夫完成了 自己关于艺术的最高理想,即"把个人从离群和孤单的境地中解脱出来","使 个人跟其他的人融合在一起"(托尔斯泰、《文论》245)。而在悲剧结尾之 前安排自传性人物列文以这种方式直面安娜这个充满矛盾的创造物,作者本 人在这一刻何尝不是选择了想象性地弥合自己的分裂立场, 融入到共情的艺 术世界之中?

# 四、"世界主义者"的悖论

现在不妨回到本文开篇提出的问题 尽管聚焦当代生活,《安娜·卡列尼娜》 在写到主人公们的跨国旅行时,并没有出现这时期同类书写中常见的那种民 族身份焦虑。在这里、民族文化差异没有被刻意凸显、但也没有被悉数抹除、 作为一种"自然"存在,它并不对人物构成真正的困扰——在托尔斯泰看来, 这类差异正属于被瓦莲卡跨过的那些身份壁垒,或者米哈伊洛夫绘画中剥除 的表象,是可以且应该超越的。甚至,在挑战俄罗斯的西方旅行书写程式之余, 作家还进一步对境外之地进行了抽象化、普遍化处理。暂时摆脱国内各种具 体纠葛的旅行者们被"空降"于此,或是遭遇生死这一永恒命题,或是沉浸 于欧洲整体历史、艺术,一些关乎伦理选择的更本质性的冲突和思考开始浮现。 而通过这样的跨界之旅,最终收获的似乎也是共通的救赎之道: 瓦莲卡式的 信仰和米哈伊洛夫的创作最终都经旅行者的传递进入俄罗斯,在小说国内部 分(基蒂照顾垂死的尼古拉以及列文、安娜的会面)激起了最大回响。

毫无疑问,"俄罗斯道路"对于托尔斯泰而言,仍然是一个核心问题, 与主人公们在旅行地发生最多交集的仍是立场各异的俄罗斯人;但它不再是 一个自闭于民族内部的问题。两个旅行地俨然是世界的高度微缩与"提纯", 而小说主体部分那个纷乱中的俄罗斯则是世界性病症的具体显现。相较于民 族史诗《战争与和平》,看似退回"家庭"的《安娜·卡列尼娜》想象并希 望拥抱的世界其实更大。面对现代文明带来的普遍失序(其中当然包括变革 时代俄罗斯社会的震荡、分裂),作家试图通过信仰和艺术抵达无关民族、 阶层的世界性共同体。从这个意义上说,托尔斯泰是一位真正的"世界主义者", 在克服地方主义的同时,他更在尝试建构一种不同于简单西化的普遍且积极 的"归属感"(卡洪123)。

问题在于,除了以其非凡气魄闻名于世,托尔斯泰还是著名的思想巨狐。

对于自己理想中的宗教和艺术共同体,他并非毫无怀疑。如前文提到的,就 在基蒂日渐康复的同时,小说已经出现不和谐的音符。不仅施塔尔夫人被证 明是虚伪的,基蒂在效仿瓦莲卡倾心照顾病人时,也无意中造成了彼得罗夫 夫妇的失谐,大感受挫。似乎只有瓦莲卡这样超脱情欲、按照原则行事的"完 美无缺的人"才能实践无差别的爱。然而,当小说进行到后半段、瓦莲卡再 次登场时,作者似乎忍不住对这种"完美"本身也投以怀疑眼光:她与谢尔 盖•伊万诺维奇(两人在基蒂和列文眼中分别是严格遵从"信仰"与"理智" 进行伦理选择的典范,663-664)的婚姻,竟然因为一个"桦树菌和白菌究竟 有什么区别"的莫名提问,还没有开始就结束了(670)。这个高度理想化的 人物就这样被充满偶然、不确定因素的现实生活开了一个不可挽回的玩笑, 成为"不育者"——如论者所言,小说对瓦莲卡的态度在此发生了明显滑移 (Foster 24), 1但考之于托尔斯泰的女性人物长廊, 这样毫无瑕疵的形象也 许本来就不是作家所钟爱的, 甚至是难以让他本人信服的。在沉浸于共同体 理想的疗养地部分,小说创造了这一信仰的化身;但一旦让之进入日常生活, 作者的怀疑主义就占据了上风。正如列文对其兄长的妙评, 完全超脱个体欲 望的人缺乏"必要的弱点"(664),归根结底,无差别、没有确定的关切对 象往往也意味着意义的缺损,无法与他人建立有限度、却也因而更能引发丰 富情感反应的联系:由此做出的伦理选择难免是唯我和缺乏持续动力的。

同样,安娜画像的完美效力也遭到了作者本人的挑战。尽管深受感动, 列文还是注意到,回国后经历了沉重打击的安娜出现了"一种新奇的神色", 它完全不在那幅画像所描绘的心灵表情的范畴之内(831)。而在会面结束后, 两位主人公都陷入到日常琐屑、乃至与各自伴侣的争执中,此前"共情"的 美好记忆被作家强力打破。面对哭泣的基蒂,重新意识到自己"丈夫"、以 及马上要承担的"父亲"身份的列文不能不承认这次拜访是不适当的(834)。 显然,无论多么高绝的艺术,终究无法一劳永逸地把握住流动不居的生活、 人心, 更不用说其背后的全部真相。包括《安娜·卡列尼娜》这部小说本身 也处于不断建构共同体、又不断对之加以拆解的矛盾中。旅行中逼近的跨界 方案一再露出破绽,甚至是被刻意翻转。作者对统一、和谐的热烈渴求受到 了关于历史与社会之复杂性的清醒认识的牵制,后者与《战争与和平》一脉 相承,并且因为作家与现实主义小说传统的进一步对话而在《安娜·卡列尼娜》 中被放大——如前文已经提到的,作为托尔斯泰心目中自己的首部"小说", 《安娜·卡列尼娜》更遵循这一关注日常生活与个体价值的文体的相关规范, 更有意识地从人物自己的视角观察世界,赋予不同的伦理选择充分的合理性。 尤其是,相较于外部的、物质性因素,作家还特别侧重呈现人类心灵那些难 以捉摸的细微变化对这些选择的影响。如果说伦理选择构成了"每一个人的

<sup>1</sup> 准确地说,瓦莲卡刚在疗养地亮相时也被描绘为缺乏生命力的(258-259),但她身上的理 想主义光辉随即压倒了一切。

具体存在"(聂珍钊、王松林9),那么《安娜·卡列尼娜》中所有的主人公 都存在于喜好与责任、情感与理性、以及各种相互对立却可能同样好的价值 的冲突之中。他们做出的选择往往是多种因素、力量合力的结果,而在现实 激流的不断冲击下,这些选择的结果和代价甚至可能比其动因更难以预料, 并将不断重塑人物对自我和世界的认知。由此呈现出的世界必然是丰富而不 齐整的,万难凝聚一体。就连"民族性"问题也在小说临近结束时证明了自 己的魔力,它并不能像跨国旅行部分所呈现的那样被轻松超越:小说透过卡 塔瓦索夫的眼睛巡视了塞尔维亚-土耳其战争中席卷俄罗斯的泛斯拉夫主义 热潮。这位博学理智的知识分子很难不注意到"斯拉夫型的性格"或"使命" 这类宏大话语的空洞、模糊,但他更强烈地感受到在狂热气氛下不可违背公意, 最终选择"说出违心之论"(923)。可以说,托尔斯泰在此陷入了一个思想 和艺术的悖论:他越是渴望忘我、求同,越是选择真诚和共情,就越是有力 地发掘出个体动机、欲望的千差万别,越是揭示出不完美、有限度乃至其眼 中人类可怜的虚妄执念才更接近生活的真相。在不断的自我怀疑和否定中, 作者似乎离自己的目的地越来越远。通过信仰之爱或艺术之感染力跨越一切 边界的共同体, 成为永远不可抵达的乌托邦。

这样的悖论或许也能部分解释,为何当《安娜·卡列尼娜》发表后大受 好评时,托尔斯泰反而颇感恼怒。他发现自己的读者仍然是将作品当作那种 时髦"小说"在阅读,沉浸于主人公的爱恨纠葛而未能分享自己试图传递的 真意(Newton 359-362)。换言之,这部充满多义性的作品并没有成为其创 作者心目中的那种好的艺术。而众所周知,在后来的创作中托尔斯泰将大大 简化自己的观点和叙事,以期避免分歧,达成统一印象。因为意识到艺术对 人情感的巨大作用,他选择更严厉地控制其伦理取向,并以是否有利于一个 以爱人为基础的共同体的建立为标准判断艺术好坏。但如伯林在那篇名文中 总结的,在寻找终极的、一元解答的道路上,他始终无法完全抛舍自己对世 界的丰富认知以及相应的艺术天才(伯林 95-96)。更要紧的是,如《安娜· 卡列尼娜》中那些孕育于抽象空间的跨界方案的失效本身所揭示的,作为其 理想中共同体基石的普遍之物如果确实存在,也无法并且不该通过抽空个体 特性来获得,对它的把握更不可能不渗透主体意志。事实上,如本文已经展 示的,即令是托尔斯泰自己倡导的那种充满感染力的"世界性"宗教与艺术 本身也是面对大变革时代多种价值涌入以及政治、经济快速变化带来的社会 分裂,立足俄罗斯有着丰富文化交融经验与积累的历史想象出的一个特殊方 案。换言之,它和任何世界主义构想一样,"体现了社会位置和文化传统的 影响"(卡洪126)。再往前推进一步,这种特殊性其实也并不必然意味着局限、 需要被克服。恰恰是它为托尔斯泰以及一批俄罗斯作家提供了挑战身份与文 明边界的切实支点和巨大动力,帮助他们将一种"对人类救赎的追求"、一 种充满理想主义色彩的精神伦理关怀注入欧洲现实主义小说传统,为后者打

开了新的创造空间(斯坦纳37)。归根到底,《安娜·卡列尼娜》对伦理选 择之复杂性的揭示,并不指向不可知论或宿命论,正如小说最后,暴风雨中 的列文已经知道自己的探索将永远没有答案,却在多难的生命中更深刻地体 会到了精神力量的强韧和不可摧毁(970-971)。陀思妥耶夫斯基1877年关于《安 娜·卡列尼娜》既证明了俄罗斯之"独特天才",又具有更广泛文明意义的 评价可谓中的(陀思妥耶夫斯基 804-805)。

#### **Works Cited**

巴特利特:《托尔斯泰大传:一个俄国人的一生》,朱建迅等译。北京:现代出版社,2014年。

[Bartlett, Rosamund. Tolstoy: A Russian Life. Trans. Zhu Jianxun et.al. Beijing: Modern Press, 2014.]

Bayley, John. Tolstoy and the Novel. London: Chatto and Windus, 1966.

伯林:《俄国思想家》,彭淮栋译。南京:译林出版社,2006年。

[Berlin, Isaiah. Russian Thinkers. Trans. Peng Huaidong. Nanjing: Yilin Press, 2003.]

Blumberg, Edwina. "Tolstoy and the English Novel: A Note on Middlemarch and Anna Karenina." Slavic Review 3 (1971): 567-568.

卡洪: "后民族时代来到了吗?",《实践与记忆》,刘东主编。北京:商务印书馆,2014年。

[Calhoun, C. "Is the Postnational Era Coming?" In Practice and Memory. Ed. Liu Dong. Beijing: The Commercial Press, 2014.]

陀思妥耶夫斯基:《作家日记》第2卷,张羽等译。石家庄:河北教育出版社,2010年。

[Dostoevsky F.M. A Writer's Diary, Vol.2. Trans. Zhang Yu et. al. Shi Jiazhuang: Hebei Education Press, 2010.]

Эйхенбаум, Б. М. Лев Толстой: семидесятые годы. Ленинград: Советскии писатель, 1960.

[Eikhenbaum. B.M. Tolstoy in the Seventies. Leningrad: Soviet Writer Press, 1960.]

艾略特:《米德尔马契》,第1卷,项星耀译。北京:人民文学出版社,1987年。

[Eliot, George. Middlemarch, Vol.1. Trans. Xiang Xingyao. Beijing: People's Literature Publishing House, 1987.]

福楼拜: 《包法利夫人》,周克希译。天津:天津人民出版社,2017年。

[Flaubert, Gustave. Madame Bovary. Trans Zhou Kexi. Tianjin: Tianjin People's Publishing House, 2017.]

Foster, John. Transnational Tolstoy: Between the West and the World. New York: Bloomsbury Academic, 2013.

Gooding, John. "Toward War and Peace: Tolstoy's Nekhliudov in Lucerne." The Russian Review 4 (1989): 383-402.

Grossman, Joan Delaney. "Tolstoy's Portrait of Anna: Keystone in the Arch." Criticism 1 (1976): 1-14.

Layton, Susan. "The Divisive Modern Russian Tourist Abroad: Representations of Self and Other in the Early Reform Era." Slavic Review 4 (2009): 848-871.

利维斯:《伟大的传统》,袁伟译。北京:生活·读书·新知三联书店,2009年。

[Leavis, F.R. The Great Tradition. Trans. Yuanwei. Beijing: SDX Joint Publishing Company, 2009.]

- 卢卡契: "托尔斯泰和现实主义的发展",《欧美作家论列夫•托尔斯泰》,陈桑编。北京: 中国社会科学出版社,1983年。
- [Luacs, Georg. "Tolstoy and the Development of Realism." In European and American writers on Leo Tolstoy. Ed. Chen Shen. Beijing: China Social Sciences Press, 1983.]
- Mandelker, Amy. "A Painted Lady: Ekphrasis in Anna Karenina." Comparative Literature 1 (1991):
- Meyer, Priscilla. How the Russians Read the French: Lermontov, Dostoevsky, Tolstoy. Madison, WI: University of Wisconsin Press, 2008.
- 纳博科夫: 《俄罗斯文学讲稿》, 丁骏等译。上海: 上海三联书店, 2015年。
- [Nabokov, Vladimir. Lectures on Russian Literature. Trans. Ding Jun et. al. Shanghai: SDX Joint Publishing (Shanghai) Co. Ltd., 2015.]
- Newton, K.M. "Tolstoy's Intention in Anna Karenina." The Cambridge Quarterly 3 (1983): 359-374.
- 聂珍钊、王松林主编:《文学伦理学批评理论研究》。北京:北京大学出版社,2020年。
- [Nie Zhenzhao, Wang Songlin ed. A Study on the Theory of Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Beijing UP, 2020.]
- Offord, Derek. Journeys to a Graveyard: Perceptions of Europe in Classical Russian Travel Writing. Dordrecht: Springer, 2005.
- 斯坦纳:《托尔斯泰或陀思妥耶夫斯基》,严忠志译。杭州:浙江大学出版社,2015年。
- [Steiner, George. Tolstoy or Dostoevsky. Trans. Yan Zhongzhi. Hangzhou: Zhejiang UP, 2015.]
- 汤普逊:《帝国意识:俄国文学与殖民主义》,杨德友译。北京:北京大学出版社,2009年。
- [Thompson, Ewa M. Imperial Knowledge: Russian Literature and Colonialism. Trans. Yang Deyou. Beijing: Beijing UP, 2009.]
- 托尔斯泰:《安娜·卡列尼娜》,《列夫·托尔斯泰文集》第9-10卷,周扬等译。北京:人民 文学出版社,2013年。
- [Tolstoy, Lev. Anna Karenina, in The Collected Works of Lev Tolstoy, Vol. 9-10. Trans. Zhou Yang et.al. Beijing: People's Literature Publishing House, 2013.]
- —:《书信》,《列夫·托尔斯泰文集》第16卷,周圣等译。北京:人民文学出版社,2013年。
- [ ... Correspondence, in The Collected Works of Lev Tolstoy, Vol. 16. Trans. Zhou Sheng et.al. Beijing: People's Literature Publishing House, 2013.]
- -: 《文论》, 《列夫·托尔斯泰文集》第 14 卷, 陈燊等译。北京: 人民文学出版社, 2013 年。
- [—. Literary Criticism, in The Collected Works of Lev Tolstoy, Vol. 14. Trans. Chen Shen et.al. Beijing: People's Literature Publishing House, 2013.]
- 徐凤林: 《东正教圣像史》。北京: 北京大学出版社, 2012年。
- [Xu Fenglin. A History of Orthodox Icons. Beijing: Beijing UP, 2012.]
- 津科夫斯基: 《俄国思想家与欧洲》,徐文静译。上海:上海三联书店,2016年。
- [Zenkovsky, Vasily. Russian Thinkers and Europe. Trans. Xu Wenjing. Shanghai: SDX Joint Publishing (Shanghai) Co. Ltd., 2016.]

# 新世纪 20 年的外国文学研究:回顾与前瞻 Foreign Literature Studies in the Early 20 Years of the New Century: Review and Prospect

黄 晖 (Huang Hui) 王青璐 (Wang Qinglu)

18ZDA284】的阶段性成果。

内容摘要:新世纪20年的外国文学研究出现了新动态、新形态,形成了多样化、多元性的特点,主要表现为从注重经典作家、作品的研究,到关注当下文学与文化的跨学科研究的发展历程。本文利用中国知网学术文献总库,对2000-2019年我国外国文学研究领域的5种CSSCI来源期刊论文进行了多种类型的数据统计。通过分析20年来刊载的9196篇论文,本文试图揭示外国文学研究在新世纪的研究重点、方向、成就和问题,探索当代外国文学研究的理论体系、话语体系的形成和发展,进而提出对外国文学研究未来发展方向的建议。关键词:外国文学;文学研究;CSSCI来源期刊;回顾与前瞻作者简介:黄晖,华中师范大学文学院教授,华中师范大学国际文学伦理学批评研究中心研究员,主要从事文学伦理学批评与非洲文学研究;王青璐,华中师范大学文学院博士生,主要从事文学伦理学批评研究。本文系国家社科基金重大项目"中国外国文学研究索引的研制与运用"【项目编号:

**Title:** Foreign Literature Studies in the Early 20 Years of the New Century: Review and Prospect

**Abstract:** The new developments in the field of foreign literature studies are mainly manifested on the journey from classic writers and works to interdisciplinary study of current popular literature and culture in the early 20 Years of the New C entury. Based on the China National Knowledge Infrastructure (CNKI) database, the articles in 5 journals about foreign literature studies indexed in Chinese Social Science Citation Index (CSSCI) database from 2000 to 2019 were statistically analyzed. Through analysis of 9196 articles, this paper attempts to open out the res earch focus, direction, achievements and problems of foreign literature studies, and explores the formation and development of theoretical system and discourse system, thus puts forward the direction of future development of foreign literature studies.

**Key words:** foreign literature; literature study; source journal of CSSCI; review and prospect

Authors: Huang Hui is Professor at the School of Chinese Language and Literature, Central China Normal University (Wuhan 430079, China). He is currently engaged in the studies of Ethical Literary Criticism and African Literature (Email: huanghui@188.com); Wang Qinglu is Ph. D Candidate at the School of Chinese Language and Literature, Central China Normal University (Wuhan 430079, China). She is currently engaged in the studies of Ethical Literary Criticism (Email: 1229892149@gg.com).

21世纪以来,外国文学研究呈现多元化趋势,研究队伍不断壮大,研究 成果日益丰富,但如何从整体上来观照外国文学研究的现状和发展趋势呢? 外国文学研究经历了怎么样的研究范式转变? 研究方向和研究重点又有怎么 样的变化?这些问题都需要进行认真的总结,因为这一总结对本学科未来的 研究进展和广大研究者撰写论文具有很大的指导性意义。一直以来,对于学 科研究的热点分析,主要根据业内专家的经验,但由于学术研究的快速发展, 任何一个专家仅仅依靠经验来判断一个学科的发展规律, 难免存在主观性和 片面性。本文将依据 CSSCI 来源期刊中的论文数量来分析, 用客观的数据将 本学科的研究特征展示出来。鉴于《外国文学评论》、《外国文学研究》、《当 代外国文学》、《外国文学》和《国外文学》五家主流专业刊物在外国文学 研究领域的重要地位和影响,本文以其刊载的论文为研究对象,考察上述命题。 通过对 2000 年至 2019 年的具体载文情况、论文作者、研究机构和作家作品 的分析,大体可以发现我国外国文学研究界新世纪20年来的研究特色,在此 基础上我们可以进行趋势总结和问题反思,为我国外国文学未来的发展提供 可资借鉴的路径。

# 一、载文统计分析

#### 1、载文量分析

期刊的载文量是指期刊在一定时间内发表论文的数量,它是衡量期刊所 载信息量大小的一个重要指标。表1的数据来源于中国知网5种外国文学期 刊的"统计与评价", 我们提取了 2000 年与 2019 年的载文量、载文量的峰 值出现年份与具体载文量,并统计出二十年的载文总量。

表 1: 2000-2019 年 5 种刊物载文量统计

(	单位:	篇	)

	《外国文学评论》	《外国文学研究》	《当代外国文学》	《外国文学》	《国外文学》
2000年	99	110	85	126	104
2019年	51	95	126	104	72
峰值年份	2001: 102	2003: 202	2015: 136	2003: 148	2000: 104
20 年总计	1608	2957	2165	2466	1551

表 1 数据显示, 5 种期刊 20 年间共刊载 9196 篇论文, 出现了载文量逐 渐减小的趋势。除《当代外国文学》外,四种刊物均在2000-2003年间达到 载文量峰值,之后年均载文量呈下降趋势。比对2000年载文量和2019年载 文量可以发现,《外国文学评论》的载文量减少了48.5%,《外国文学研究》 的载文量减少了14%,《外国文学》的载文量减少了17%,《国外文学》的 载文量减少了30.8%。《当代外国文学》的情况比较特殊,在2000年以前以 刊发外国作品译介为主,比对2019年的载文量和期刊载文量峰值136篇(2015 年),《当代外国文学》载文量减少了7%。

为了能够更加客观准确地反映出外国文学的研究现状和5种刊物具体的 载文情况,表2对5种期刊2000年和2019年刊载的中国学者撰写的研究性 论文的数量进行统计与比较,数据来源于中国知网中5种刊物2000年至2019 年的目录。为了强调论文的研究属性,翻译、书评、访谈、会议综述和报道 性的动态、纪念性文章和会议讲话等均不在本文统计之列。

表 2: 2000、2019 年 5 种刊物研究性论文载文量统计

(	单	位:	篇	)

	《外国文学评论》	《外国文学研究》	《当代外国文学》	《外国文学》	《国外文学》
2000年	66	94	33	45	64
2019年	45	66	80	90	67

从表2来看,《当代外国文学》、《外国文学》以及《国外文学》刊发 的研究性论文的数量呈上升趋势。结合表 1 中 2000 年和 2019 年的总发文量 来看,5种刊物中研究性论文的比重也在提升,但是比重的变化始终是建立在 基数变小的基础上。所以5种刊物年载文量总体来看有所下降,这和我国外 国文学研究队伍的不断扩大和研究论文数量大幅增长形成比较鲜明的对照。 5 种刊物的载文量不升反降的情况,首先表明对于所刊载论文的质量要求更高 了,个别刊物可以接受三四万字的长篇论文:其次也说明了外国文学研究水 平的显著提高,学者们能够自觉地在深度和广度上强化研究的难度。

#### 2、载文所涉及国别与地区分析

外国文学的国别与地区统计分析可以帮助我们了解期刊和研究者们所重 点关注的作家作品,进而发现外国文学研究的某种趋同性。为了能更为准确 地体现出5种刊物的办刊特色和发文特点,我们把论文分为文学综论和作家 作品专论两大类,文学综论是指对某一(几)种文类、文学现象、文学理论、 批评方法等进行宏观描述和整体研究的论文,我们把文学理论、比较文学、 翻译研究、学科建设等方面的论文纳入综论性论文的范围; 而作家作品专论 则是指运用特定的研究方法或者视角对某一作家的某一(几)部作品进行系 统而深入的研究。据统计,在5种杂志所刊载的9196篇论文中,属于文学综 论性质的论文有2318篇,另有6878篇论文与特定国别和语言相关,涉及欧洲、

美洲、亚洲、大洋洲和非洲。

表 3:5 种刊物载文所涉及国别地区分布

(单位:篇)

	( — L2 . AHI )								
		《外国文学 评论》	《外国文学 研究》	《当代外国 文学》	《外国文学》	《国外文学》	总计		
综论		256	1048	254	476	284	2318		
	英国	305	502	257	312	319	1695		
	法国	82	90	106	89	87	454		
	俄罗斯	60	110	50	57	77	354		
	德国	71	42	31	62	56	262		
	希腊	18	13	0	6	25	62		
欧洲	奥地利	20	4	4	16	10	54		
	意大利	15	20	10	17	16	78		
	西班牙	10	7	5	11	9	42		
	捷克	24	18	7	10	10	69		
	爱尔兰	48	33	39	36	39	195		
	挪威	2	23	0	2	1	28		
चार आग	日本	95	64	31	33	38	261		
亚洲	印度	19	17	9	9	14	68		
<b>光</b> 知[	美国	289	551	517	408	364	2129		
美洲	加拿大	7	18	36	40	23	124		
非洲		17	24	28	19	14	102		
大洋洲		14	12	59	22	8	115		

表 3 数据显示,新世纪 20 年来,外国文学研究在研究对象上存在着明显 的地区分布不平衡的现象,以欧洲、美洲文学构成的西方文学是研究者关注 的重点。5种刊物在20年间均刊载了大量的美国文学研究论文,这反映出国 内研究者对美国文学极大的研究热情。另外,英国也遥遥领先于其他国家或 地区,成为外国文学研究领域第二热门对象国。美国、英国文学研究之盛同 两国的历史、经济、科技等综合国力之强盛密切相关,也离不开我国义务教 育阶段对英语教育的普及。此外,法国、俄罗斯、德国、爱尔兰等欧美国家 的文学也引起众多研究者的关注,这也是与这些国家的文化软实力分不开。 不过, 欧美国别文学中也存在一些国家、地区的文学尚待进一步展开研究, 如希腊、奥地利、捷克、加拿大、澳大利亚等。

国别与地区的统计分析还显示,西方文学研究的盛况同东方文学研究的 滞后、冷清形成鲜明的对照,所以我们认为需要更多的研究者关注亚洲与非 洲等广大发展中国家或地区的文学,摆脱重西方轻东方的传统观念,"重拾

东方文化自信,强化文化认同感,积极规划,全盘考虑",在世界文学研究 中彰显东方文学不可替代重要位置和意义。(李伟昉 1)

# 3、作家作品分析

"对作家作品的研究是文学研究的重要内容,是进行文学史研究和理论 研究的基础。"(赵山奎 148)据统计,20年间共有6878篇论文以具体作家 作品为主要研究对象,论文数量占载文总量的74.79%。表4统计了被20篇 及以上的论文作为主要研究对象的作家,共计37人。

表 4: 5 种刊物 2000-2019 年主要作家研究论文统计 (单位:篇)

100 篇以上: 1人	莎士比亚 (156)
70-100 篇: 1人	<b>托妮・</b> 莫里森 (87)
40-69 篇: 7人	乔伊斯(57)福克纳(53)库切(48) T.S. 艾略特(44)
	伍尔夫(43)纳博科夫(42)庞德(42)
	阿特伍德(39)陀思妥耶夫斯基(38)劳伦斯(38)索尔・贝娄(36)霍桑
	(35) 菲利普・罗斯 (33) 奈保尔 (33) 爱伦・坡 (33) 亨利 ・詹姆斯 (32)
20 20 25 20 1	唐・德里罗(32)华兹华斯(32)君特・格拉斯(31)康拉德(30)卡夫卡(30)
20-39 篇: 28 人	麦克尤恩(29)王尔德(29)品钦(29)海明威(28)石黑一雄(27)易卜
	生(28) 戴维・洛奇(26) 歌徳(26) 汤亭亭(26) 贝克特(24) 多丽丝・莱
	辛 (24) 门罗 (24) 哈代 (22) 谭恩美 (21)

表 4 的数据显示, 莎士比亚高居榜首, 成为唯一超过 100 篇论文的研究 对象, 莎学的兴盛同表 3 中英国文学的研究现状相呼应。女性文学和少数族 裔文学是进入 21 世纪以来外国文学研究领域最为引人注目的热点,美国非裔 女作家托妮•莫里森研究论文数量排名第二就是明证。在莫里森研究热的背后, 我们看到非裔文学逐渐成为研究热点,可以预见非洲及非裔文学研究将会成 为外国文学研究的重要组成部分。在有40-69篇研究论文的作家中,除库切 为南非白人作家外,其他作家均为欧美白人作家,除莎士比亚、T. S. 艾略特 和庞德, 其他作家均以小说或诗歌创作而知名, 而且这些作家均使用英语进 行创作,可见英语文学研究之盛。从总体上说,二十世纪以来的作家占据了 绝大部分,但对于同期的一些有潜力的作家,国内学者关注的比较少,例如 对近年来诺贝尔文学奖获得者的研究,都是等到颁奖结果公布以后再一拥而 上,缺少预见性的研究。

### 二、作者统计分析

#### 1、作者群分析

我们将在5种刊物上发文8篇及以上的175位作者视为核心作者群,他 们为刊物质量的提高作出了重要贡献。进一步统计还可以发现,这175位核 心作者中的大多数保持了发文的连续性, 在相当长的时期内没有间断过发表 论文。此外,统计还显示,175位核心作者的研究方向几乎涵盖了美、英、俄、 法、日、德、希腊等各个主要国别、语种,以及小说、诗歌、戏剧、文学理 论等主要研究门类,表明我国外国文学研究领域在各个研究方向上都已经出 现了堪称国内一流的学者。

表 5: 核心作者群及发文量统计

	表 3: 核心作有群及及义重统订
40 篇以上: 1人	殷企平 (40)
30-39 篇: 1人	申丹 (33)
20-29 篇: 8 人	王建平 (26) 陶家俊 (24) 肖明翰 (23) 杨金才 (23) 王宁 (22)
20-29 扁: 6 八	于雷 (21) 王腊宝 (20) 乔国强 (20)
	尚必武(19)何宁(18)朱振武(17)章燕(17)吴笛(17)
	王丽亚(17) 聂珍钊(17) 傅浩(17) 方红(17) 但汉松(17)
	张建华(16) 张德明(16) 王卓(16) 李永毅(16) 丁宏为(16)
	陈世丹(16) 冯伟(16) 赵山奎(15) 张和龙(15) 金衡山(15)
	金冰 (15) 陈丽 (15) 冯亚琳 (15) 陈兵 (15) 曾艳钰 (15)
	张琼(15)张琦(14)王晓路(14)虞建华(14)林斌(14)
	王晓路(14)刘立辉(14)梁工(14)郭军(14)程锡麟(14)
	汪介之(14)张沛(13)杨建(13)汪民安(13)张杰(13)
	何成洲(13) 林精华(13) 龚璇(13) 陈榕(13) 郑燕虹(13)
	吕洪灵(13) 董洪川(13) 朱新福(13) 宋艳芳(13) 汪民安(13)
	陈后亮(12)金莉(12)程心(12)周小仪(12)陈礼珍(12)
	陈红 (12) 李公昭 (12) 徐蕾 (12) 罗良功 (12) 刘成富 (12)
	王玉括(12) 李伟民(12) 邹惠玲(11) 赵国新(11) 张子清(11)
	张中载 (11) 王炳钧 (11) 苏晖 (11) 马弦 (11) 刘阳 (11)
	陈雷(11)徐彬(11)曾艳兵(11)田俊武(11)张旭春(11)
10 10 66	肖锦龙 (11)   杨国静 (11)   黄芝 (11)   陈礼珍 (11)   郭方云 (11)
10-19 篇: 165 人	庞好农(11) 罗益民(11) 何畅(11) 戴从容(11) 曹顺庆(10)
	高奋(10)周怡(10)张剑(10)赵文书(10)王志耕(10)
	王守仁(10) 朴玉(10) 苏耕欣(10) 郝田虎(10) 张亘(10)
	张跃军(10)王雅华(10)韩瑞祥(10)孙宏(10)周颖(10)
	谷红丽(10)毛亮(10)潘志明(10)桑翠林(10)郑佰青(10)
	王卫新(10)王旭峰(10)张龙海(10)赵晓彬(10)钱兆明(10)
	蒋承勇(9) 陈爱敏(9) 丁林棚(9) 陈姝波(9) 程倩(9)
	取幼壮 (9) 程巍 (9) 董晓 (9) 段枫 (9) 高晓玲 (9)
	李增(9) 胡志明(9) 霍士富(9) 李元(9) 易晓明(9)
	何伟文(9) 刘岩(9) 阮炜(9) 邵凌(9) 孙胜忠(9)
	梁展(9) 王钦峰(9) 王树福(9) 王松林(9) 申富英(9)   工丽丽(0) 公教(0) 溪建(0) 本正松(0) 陈永园(0)
	王丽丽(9)谷裕(9)潘建(9)李正栓(9)陈永国(9)   刘意青(9)陈红薇(8)陈正发(8)刘建军(8)江宁康(8)
	康澄(8)李俄宪(8)李靓(8)李维屏(8)刘炅(8)
	颜学军(8) 殷晓芳(8) 袁洪庚(8) 王炎(8) 蒲若茜(8)
	歌字年(8) 放皖方(8) 泉洪庆(8) 土炙(8) 浦石西(8)
	7MT (0) 河珀 (0) 河归炟 (0) 不建削 (0) 安苗枫 (0)

(注:对每位作者发文数量进行统计时,第二作者没有计入。)

其中,在本文所统计的全部5家刊物均发表过论文的作者包括申丹、王 建平、杨金才、于雷、王腊宝、乔国强、朱振武、张德明、王卓、赵山奎、 张和龙、金冰、冯亚琳、陈兵、汪介之、程锡麟、王玉括、徐彬、陈礼珍等 学者。值得我们关注的是,中青年学者在核心作者群中占有非常大的比例, 尤其是一批 40 岁以下的青年学者在外国文学研究中正在发挥越来越显著的影 响力,这说明外国文学学科的学术梯队建设是卓有成效的。

# 2、作者单位分布分析

我们认为,发表学术论文数量不是衡量一个学术机构学术实力和水平的 唯一指标,但确实又是一个重要指标。通过 CSSCI 的单位发文量统计,可以 从科研产出的角度评价一个学术机构在外国文学研究领域的学术影响力。

从表 6 可以看出,发文量进入前 10 名的这 10 个单位同时也是我国外国 文学研究的重镇,它们中绝大多数都具有外国语言文学类或比较文学与世界 文学专业的博士学位授权点。

排名	单位名称	发文量(篇)	核心作者
1	南京大学	550	杨金才、何宁、方红、但汉松、陈兵、张琦、何成洲、
			刘成富、王守仁、龚璇、徐蕾、张子清、肖锦龙、赵文书、
			董晓、江宁康、张冲
2	北京大学	468	申丹、丁宏为、刘立辉、张沛、周小仪、毛亮、谷裕、
			刘意青、王军、王炎
3	北京外国语大学	365	陶家俊、于雷、王丽亚、张建华、陈榕、赵国新、
			张中载、王炳钧、张剑、韩瑞祥、潘志明、金莉
4	中国社会科学院	252	陈雷、周颖、傅浩、程巍、梁展、王逢振、周启超
5	浙江大学	237	殷企平、吴笛、张德明、谭惠娟
6	华中师范大学	232	聂珍钊、苏晖、杨建、罗良功、王树福、李俄宪
7	上海外国语大学	197	虞建华、李维屏、乔国强、张和龙、周怡、程心
8	中国人民大学	179	王建平、陈世丹、郭军、孙宏、耿幼壮
9	南京师范大学	177	汪介之、吕洪灵、张杰、刘阳、陈爱敏、康澄
10	北京师范大学	136	章燕

表 6: 发文量前 10 位的单位

(说明:本文所统计高校名称有过变更的,均以现名为准:作者单位有过变更的,以发文 时所标注的单位为准。)

从表 6 可见, 我国外国文学研究有坚实的基础和庞大的队伍。除北京外 国语大学和上海外国语大学为外国语言大学,其他高校均为综合性大学和师 范大学,这些学校的综合实力在国内也是有目共睹的。南京大学拥有最多的 核心作者,同时也凭借最高的发文量成为国内外国文学研究遥遥领先的单位。 发文量前10的单位分布在北京、南京、上海、杭州、武汉五地。北京地区发 文量最多,单位也最多,这与北京地区高校、研究单位云集,本身具备强大 的科研力量有关,同时不离开北京作为全国政治、文化中心的优势。位于长 三角的南京、上海、杭州三地也拥有众多著名高校和知名学者,文化底蕴深厚,

对外交流活跃,发文量名列前茅也在情理之中。华中师范大学位于中西部地区, 凭借优良的学风和持续性的理论创新,成为全国外国文学研究的重镇,实属 不易。

#### 3、下载量分析

如果说学者的发文数量是衡量一个学者学术成果的重要指标,那么学者 所发表论文的被引数量就应该是一个更为重要的指标。对学者来说,论文在 期刊上刊发出来并不意味着学术研究活动的结束,只有所发表的论文能引起 学术界的关注并在一定程度上促进本学科研究的纵深发展,才能体现出研究 的真正价值。在我们的研究中,论文的下载量和引用次数被视为重要的指标。

论文	作者	刊物	发表时间 (年)	下载量 (次)
《身份认同导论》	陶家俊	《外国文学》	2004	19356
《文学伦理学批评:基本理论与术语》	聂珍钊	《外国文学研究》	2010	16736
《叙述、文化定位和身份认同——霍 米•巴巴的后殖民批评理论》	王 宁	《外国文学》	2002	11725
《互文性理论的缘起与流变》	秦海鹰	《外国文学评论》	2004	11051
《英美文学中的哥特传统》	肖明翰	《外国文学评论》	2001	10637
《文学伦理学批评与道德批评》	聂珍钊	《外国文学研究》	2006	10487
《文学伦理学批评: 文学批评方法新探索》	聂珍钊	《外国文学研究》	2004	9839
《文学空间与空间叙事理论》	董晓烨	《外国文学》	2012	9742
社会转型期的"美国梦"——试论嘉莉 妹妹的道德倾向	黄开红	《外国文学研究》	2006	9735
《叙事学》	申 丹	《外国文学》	2003	9706

表 7:5 种刊物 2000-2019 年刊载论文下载量统计

(数据来源:中国知网,截止日期为2020年10月31日)

表 7 是先选取了每个刊物在 2000 年至 2019 年刊载论文中下载量靠前的 论文,然后进行前十名排序的统计结果。在5种刊物中,下载量最大的是文 学理论研究方面的论文:文学伦理学批评3篇、哥特传统2篇、身份认同1篇、 叙事学1篇、空间研究1篇、互文理论1篇。 聂珍钊教授的文学伦理学批评 方面的论文在10篇下载量大的论文中就有3篇,可见文学伦理学批评理论的 影响力之大。需要指出的是,从空间批评的角度研究外国文学是近年来兴起 的研究热点,我们相信这一研究热点将会持续下去。另外,生态文学、数字 人文、创伤、记忆、共同体等研究也新见迭出,逐渐成为新的学术增长点。

#### 4、引用次数分析

论文被引次数是评价期刊和学者学术影响力的基本指标,可用来衡量期 刊和学者在学术交流中所处的地位。表 8 选取 5 种刊物 2000-2019 年载文中 引用量前三篇论文,进行前十名排序。

论文	作者	刊物	发表时间 (年)	引用量 (次)
《身份认同导论》	陶家俊	《外国文学》	2004	1123
《文学伦理学批评:基本理论与术语》	聂珍钊	《外国文学研究》	2010	1060
《互文性理论的缘起与流变》	秦海鹰	《外国文学评论》	2004	811
《文学伦理学批评:文学批评方法新 探索》	聂珍钊	《外国文学研究》	2004	598
《英美文学中的哥特传统》	肖明翰	《外国文学评论》	2001	500
《关于文学伦理学批评》	聂珍钊	《外国文学研究》	2005	459
《空间理论和文学空间》	陆 扬	《外国文学研究》	2004	444
《生态女权主义》	金 莉	《外国文学》	2004	441
《互文性》	陈永国	《外国文学》	2003	427
《文学伦理学批评与道德批评》	聂珍钊	《外国文学研究》	2006	425

表 8:5 种刊物 2000-2019 年刊载论文引用次数统计

(数据来源:中国知网,截止日期为2020年10月31日)

可以发现,表8的引用量排名同表7的下载量排名有部分重合。同时, 表 8 的引用源也反映出外国文学研究者在具体的论文撰写中较多地使用与文 学伦理学批评、生态批评、互文理论以及身份建构相关的理论。尤其值得一 提的是,在10篇极高影响力论文中,聂珍钊教授一人就有3篇,显示了其在 外国文学研究领域具有很高的学术造诣和广泛的学术影响力。另外,需要说 明的是,没有被列入上述统计的学者以及排列较后的学者,并不意味着其学 术影响力就一定小,除了本文仅统计了五种刊物近20年的论文这一主要原因 外,还有一些学者研究的课题较窄,关注此领域研究的学者较少,故而造成 其论文的引用量也较少,导致这些学者无法进入我们的统计视野。

#### 三、研究热点与主要成就

在一篇学术论文中,关键词所占篇幅较少,一般不超过5个词或者词组, 但文献计量学认为关键词是作者对论文核心思想的高度概括和提炼,是一篇 学术论文的精髓所在。因此,我们可以从统计和分析学术论文的关键词入手, 运用频次较高的关键词来描述一个学科领域的研究热点和重点,并进而总结 归纳其学术成就。本文借助 Citespace 可视化工具从四个时间段构建了外国文 学关键词共现图谱, 讲而分析外国文学学科新世纪 20 年的研究热点与主要成 就。

200	2000-2004			5-200	9	2010-2014 2015-201			5-2019	9	
关键词	频次	中心性	关键词	频次	中心性	关键词	频次	中心性	关键词	频次	中心性
后现代 主义	34	0.06	历史	33	0.08	现代性	30	0.05	文学伦理 学批评	53	0.20
象征	29	0.08	后现代	30	0.08	文学伦理 学批评	29	0.04	伦理选择	29	0.11
自我	22	0.07	自然	29	0.01	身份	26	0.07	空间	28	0.07
全球化	21	0.08	解构	27	0.15	历史	25	0.23	创伤	22	0.11
女性主义	20	0.07	生态批评	25	0.08	生态批评	25	0.04	他者	20	0.19
现代主义	20	0.10	现代性	24	0.13	文化	23	0.08	伦理	20	0.07
后现代	20	0.03	自我	24	0.04	全球化	23	0.16	现代性	19	0.02
历史	18	0.13	女性主义	23	0.07	他者	23	0.06	互文性	18	0.08
现实主义	18	0.05	身份	22	0.06	空间	22	0.08	身体	18	0.04
互文性	17	0.08	互文性	19	0.15	后现代主 义	21	0.04	记忆	17	0.08
文化	17	0.10	记忆	18	0.04	身体	19	0.04	世界文学	14	0.03
对话	16	0.05	文学伦理 学批评	17	0.02	记忆	19	0.13	共同体	13	0.01
东方主义	16	0.03	后殖民	14	0.06	叙事	18	0.07	虚构	11	0.01

表 9:5 种刊物 2000-2019 年关键词词频统计

从表 9 关键词出现的频次可以看出 2000-2019 年外国文学领域研究热点 的变化情况: (1) "后现代主义"、"象征"、"自我"、"全球化"、 "女性主义"、"现代主义"、"互文性"等关键词具有较高的出现频次, 是 2000-2004 年众多外国文学研究者较为热衷的研究内容。综合分析表 9 及 聚类结果,中心性超过 0.10 为关键节点,中心性数值越大,与该关键词相关 的研究更为热门。2000-2004年外国文学的研究热点主要集中在以下三个领域: 现代主义文学研究、文化研究、女性主义文学研究。(2)2005-2009年外国 文学高频关键词变化较大, "历史"、"自然"、"解构"、"生态批评"、 "现代性"、"自我"、"身份"、"记忆"、"文学伦理学批评"等成为 学术热点。通过分析表9以及聚类结果,可以将2005-2009年外国文学的研 究热点内容归纳为以下五个领域:后现代主义文学研究、现代主义文学研究、 生态文学研究、女性主义文学研究、后殖民文学研究。(3)由表9以及与以 上两个时间段的对比可发现,"现代性"、"文学伦理学批评"、"身份"、"历 史"、"生态批评"仍然是 2010—2014 年外国文学研究中具有较高出现频次 的关键词,表明这几个热点的研究比较稳定,同时高频关键词中也出现了"他 者研究"、"空间研究"、"记忆研究"等研究内容。(4)综合分析表9并 与以上三个时间段对比可以发现,"文学伦理学批评"、"伦理选择"、"空 间"、"创伤"、"他者"、"伦理"、"共同体"等为具有高频率的关键词, 可知 2015-2019 年外国文学的研究热点内容集中在以下领域:文学伦理学批评、

空间研究、创伤研究、人类命运共同体、世界文学研究。

通过高频关键词聚类以及相关文献的分析和归纳, 可以将外国文学研究 热点和成就概括为以下三个方面: 第一、汇聚文学话语元素, 构建外国文学 研究话语体系。一直以来,我国的外国文学研究呈现出以欧美国家的作家作 品为主要研究对象,以欧美文学理论为主要研究方法的格局。这种以欧美话 语为中心,本土话语严重缺席的现象引起广大国内学者的质疑。新世纪以来, 在国内学者的努力下,欧美话语中心化现象初步缓解,一些学者开始尝试在 外国文学研究中构建中国话语体系,许多学者如聂珍钊教授、申丹教授、曹 顺庆教授、傅修延教授等都在建构中国话语体系的努力中取得了明显的成效。 在聂珍钊教授的倡导和引领下,文学伦理学批评以伦理选择为理论基础建构 自己的学术批评话语,如伦理身份、伦理选择、伦理环境、兽性因子、人性 因子、自由意志、理性意志等,形成了文学伦理学批评的话语体系。文学伦 理学批评经过了十余年的发展,在中外学者的共同努力下,已成为一种比较 成熟的理论体系和批评话语体系。同英美的伦理批评相比,中国的文学伦理 学批评不仅建构了自己的基础理论,而且形成自己的批评话语,拥有专门的 批评术语,学术观点鲜明,在理论建构与批评实践方面取得了突出的成就, 为我国的文学研究提供了一套可供操作的研究路径与批评范式。

第二、探索中外文化交流与互鉴,共建人类命运共同体。多年来,中外 文化交流在一定程度上仍然处于不平衡的状态, 世界各国对中国文化的了解 还不够充分。随着我国综合国力的增强,新思想和新理论不断产生,文学的 翻译与研究在文化交流与互鉴中的作用与使命愈加凸显。在以开放的心态继 续接纳国外优秀文化成果的同时,我们也应该积极翻译和传播中国文化,将 中国优秀文化成果推介到各国, 改写以输入为主的文化交流模式, 增强国家 软实力与中国文化的国际影响力,为构建人类命运共同体贡献力量。为此, 多家外国文学研究杂志开设"中外文化交流与互鉴"研究专栏,致力于发表 探索中外文化交流与互鉴的文学史实和有效途径的论文。

第三、更新传统的世界文学观念,开创外国文学研究新范式。随着我国 综合国力的大幅提升,国家对中国文化"走出去"持续推进,中国文学的不 断壮大和国际影响力的日益增强,中国学术界又掀起了新一轮世界文学理论 研究的热潮。特别是新世纪以来,世界文学的格局和中国文学的全球使命发 生了巨大变化,世界文学观念研究也取得了突破性进展,不仅更新了传统的 世界文学观念,开创了世界文学研究新范式,还有利于促进外国文学回归文 学性研究和文学本体研究,增强文学的共同诗学问题意识,逐渐实现了外国 文学在共同诗学探索和建构上的学术价值。这一研究范式的论文主要从以下 两个方面对世界文学进行探讨:首先,对全球化、世界主义、世界文学等重 要概念进行介绍、梳理和分析,如王宁的《西方文论关键词: 世界主义》与《作 为问题导向的世界文学概念》,何成洲的《全球化与文学:视角、立场与方法》,

刘洪涛的《世界文学: 学科整合与历史承担》。其次,是带着明显的反思意 图去回顾全球化进程和世界文学的发展过程,并且尝试明确世界文学的使命, 如张弘的《全球化语境的反思和外国文学研究的当下使命》、张旭《文学转 型与反思——试论全球化与数字化时代希利斯•米勒的文学新观念》等。

# 四、未来发展的趋势与走向

新世纪 20 年的外国文学研究出现了新动态、新形态,形成了多样化、多 元性的特点。这一特点是在新的历史时期,经由新的认知经验并紧密结合国 家发展的时代需求,外国文学研究界表现出的前所未有的学术自觉与创造激 情。这一时期全面拓宽了外国文学研究的广泛可能性,并将这一学科提升、 推进到前所未有的高度、深度和广度。处于新时代的外国文学研究虽然面临 着良好的发展机遇,但话语体系建设依然任重道远,尚需要研究者努力做好 以下几个方面的工作:

第一、中国的外国文学研究应坚持马克思主义的立场、观点和方法,立 足本土文学与文化发展需要,自觉构建学术话语体系。马克思主义的基本原 理和方法论具有科学性和普适性,是我们掌握科学的文学研究方法、构建文 学理论体系的指导理论。我国的外国文学学科体系与学术体系发展得相对比 较完善,但话语体系建设仍然任重道远。正如聂珍钊教授所指出的那样,"我 国文学研究借鉴西方经验,尤其是移植西方的批评理论与方法,虽然在促进 中国学术研究的繁荣方面功不可没,但导致中国学术话语丧失而西方理论和 话语独霸天下的严重后果却是不争的事实。"(聂珍钊 19)在经历了所谓的 "跟风"与"失语"期后,未来的相关研究不仅要继续借鉴国外的研究成果, 还应挖掘、整理、弘扬本土的传统文化资源,在继承中华优秀传统文学批评 理论和借鉴西方先进文学批评理论的基础上,融会贯通,从而构建一套科学 严谨、体系完整、内涵丰富的学术话语体系,进一步深化对文学发展规律的 认识、把握和运用,为坚持和发展马克思文艺思想作出原创性的贡献。

第二,中国的外国文学研究应助推中国学术走出去,为解决人类普遍面 临的问题提供中国智慧和中国方案。中国学术走出去是对国家改革开放的一 种呼应和证明,是对世界文化、人类文明的创新和发展之路所提供的一种智 慧贡献与方法选项。在此意义上,我国的外国文学研究应在研究过程中彰显 中国当代价值观,逐步实现中国学术对于世界文学和人类文明进步的贡献。 中国学者应加强理论自信与文化自信,更好地与国际学界进行平等的对话与 交流,争取国际学术话语权。聂珍钊教授领衔的文学伦理学批评之所以能够 成为中国学术走出去的范例,就在于文学伦理学批评团队积极响应中国学术 走出去的战略号召,致力于该理论的国际传播及国际学术话语权的建构,在 国际学术发表、成立国际学术组织、举办国际会议等方面成果斐然,吸引了 众多外国学者加盟,获得了众多国际同行的高度评价,为世界文学研究注入 了新的生机与活力。

第三、中国的外国文学研究应推进研究方法创新融合, 开拓出外国文学 研究的新路径、新方法。首先,外国文学研究者应密切关注当下文学理论的 发展动向,从全球化和本土视角对外国文学进行系统阐释,揭示文本创作、 民族文化与共同体形塑之间的互动关系, 客观审视外国文学的发展轨迹与嬗 变趋势。其次,我国的外国文学研究经历了从注重经典作家、作品的介绍与 研究,到关注当下流行文学与文化的跨学科研究的发展历程。在跨学科研究 方法日益流行的今天,我们要同时意识到文学研究应以"文学"为中心,应 坚守文学本位的立场,加强对外国文学的艺术层面与形式技巧的研究,为当 代文学创作的发展提供思想资源和艺术经验。最后,就具体研究领域而言, 我们认为,外国文学研究者可以在学科史与学术史研究、伦理学批评、文学 基本原理、中外文学文化交流与互鉴、少数族裔文学、亚非文学、纪实文学、 科幻文学、儿童文学等领域继续深入开拓,取得更大的成就。

未来外国文学研究的创新,要推陈出新,充分吸收中外优秀文化思想的 精华,不断展现中国学者的思想力和创造力,提出更多具有原创性、时代性 的理论和批评方法。正如习近平总书记强调的, "只有以我国实际为研究起 点,提出具有主体性、原创性的理论观点,构建具有自身特质的学科体系、 学术体系、话语体系,我国哲学社会科学才能形成自己的特色和优势。"(习 近平 2) 我们有理由相信,中国的外国文学研究实践将为世界文学和人类命运 共同体的构建作出特殊的贡献。

#### **Works Cited**

- 李伟昉: "关于东方文学比较研究的思考", 《河南大学学报》6(2015): 1-5。
- [Li, Weifang. Meditation on Comparative Study of Oriental Literature. Journal of Henan University 6 (2015):1-5.
- 聂珍钊: 《外国文学学术史研究工程的理论及方法论价值》, 《外国文学动态研究》3(2020): 12-20。
- [Nie, Zhenzhao. Theory and Value of Methodology of Research Project of Academic History of Foreign Literature. New Perspectives on World Literature 3 (2020): 12-20.]
- 习近平: "在哲学社会科学工作座谈会上的讲话",《人民日报》2016年5月19日,第2版。
- [Xi, Jinping. "Speech at the Symposium on Philosophy and Social Science." People's Daily May 19 (2016): 2.
- 赵山奎:《<外国文学评论>20年——关于刊物各项统计数据的分析》,《外国文学评论》1(2007):
- [Zhao, Shankui. 20 Years of Foreign Literature Review: Analysis of Statistical Data of Journal 1 (2007):146-153.]

# 文学译介视野中的莫言

# Mo Yan in the Perspective of Literary Translation

刘云虹(Liu Yunhong)

内容摘要: 获得诺贝尔文学奖给莫言带来了巨大的国际声誉,有力提升了莫言作品在世界范围内的影响力,但也引发了各界的诸多质疑与争论。本文从莫言作品的异域生命空间、阐释参照与莫言作品的经典化以及原作生命丰富性的拓展三个方面,揭示文学译介视野下莫言作品在异域的新生命之旅及其中呈现出的鲜明特点。本文指出,通过译介及其所拓展的阅读空间,莫言作品的世界性传播持续推进;而在跨文化的多元阐释中,文学伦理价值与审美价值的彰显促使莫言作品的丰富性不断拓展,逐步实现其经典化。

关键词: 文学译介; 莫言; 阐释; 经典化; 新生命

作者简介: 刘云虹, 南京大学外国语学院教授, 主要研究领域为翻译学与法国文学。本文是国家社科基金项目"中国文学外译批评研究"【项目编号: 16BYY009】的阶段性成果。

**Title:** Mo Yan in the Perspective of Literary Translation

Abstract: Winning the Nobel Prize in Literature has brought Mo Yan to a worldwide reputation and greatly enhanced his works' influence around the world. However, doubts and controversies have also arisen at the same time. With an analysis of the following three aspects: Mo Yan's works' life space in foreign countries, canonization of referential interpretations and Mo Yan's works, new horizons of the original text, this paper intends to reveal a new life journey of Mo Yan's works crossing foreign lands and its distinct features in the perspective of literary translation and introduction. The paper points out that, through the translation and introduction of his works and the further reading space that they have brought to us, Mo Yan's works have been keeping spreading around the world, and within multiple and intercultural interpretations, the manifestation of ethical literary value and aesthetic value promotes continuous discovery of the richness and diversity in Mo Yan's works, thus his works have gradually reached their canonization.

**Key Words:** Literary translation; Mo Yan; interpretation; canonization; new life **Author:** Liu Yunhong, Ph.D., is Professor at the School of Foreign Studies, Nanjing University (Nanjing, 210023, China). Her academic research focuses on translation studies and French literature (Email: ningyunhan@126.com).

2012年10月, 莫言荣获诺贝尔文学奖, 成为首位中国籍诺贝尔文学奖获 得者。这在国内外引发了普遍关注。有学者将莫言获诺奖的国外反响归纳为 "新闻事件、政治事件、文学事件"三方面:首先,世界各大主流媒体对莫 言获奖进行了及时、广泛的报道: 其次, 国外媒体对莫言获奖的报道很快由 新闻事件转向了政治事件, "莫言作为体制内作家的身份、莫言的政治姿态 甚至中国的自由民主"等成为媒体热议的话题;再者,从文学角度来看,国 外媒体和学界的评论可谓毁誉参半,有汉学家认为莫言是"一位伟大的作家", 其获奖是"实至名归",也有观点认为"2012年的诺贝尔文学奖授予莫言是 典型的不顾文学品质的做法" (姜智芹 213-219)。诺贝尔文学奖似乎总是伴 随着争议,国外如此,国内也不例外。莫言获奖令国人多年难圆的诺奖梦终 于得以实现,整个中国文化界不禁为之欢呼、为之振奋。然而,赞誉中却也 不乏批评的声音。政治层面,有莫言的批评者"或指责其与体制的亲近,或 紧盯其道德'瑕疵'不放,或怀疑获奖背后有不可告人的政治交易"(吴子 林 51)。文学层面,有评论者直言: "莫言的创作并没有达到我们这个时代 精神创造的最高点。他的作品缺乏伟大的伦理精神,缺乏足以照亮人心的思 想光芒,缺乏诺贝尔在他的遗嘱中所说的'理想倾向'"(李建军)。另有 学者对诺贝尔文学奖本身提出质疑,认为"诺贝尔评奖委员会不具备某种权 威性,是一种社会体制、文化团体的存在。它与文学性没有关系,与优秀作 品更没有必然关系,只有或然意义,只有统计学意义"(高旭东等50)。此外, 媒体和学界普遍认为, 莫言获奖离不开翻译的助力, 甚至"可以说莫言获奖, 也可以说翻译获奖"(高旭东等50)。莫言获诺贝尔文学奖这一事件让我们 听到了各种不同的声音,也看到了诸多观点的交锋,但至少有一点可以肯定, 即新的历史时期,在中外文化交流互鉴的时代语境中,中国文学文化"走出去" 受到前所未有的关注,经由文学译介构建的中国文学与世界的关系从来没有 今天这般紧密。

莫言在获奖后曾说: "将近一个月来,我经历了一场人生的洗礼,围绕 着诺贝尔文学奖这个问题,诸多的争论是一面镜子,透过这面镜子我看到了 人心、看到了世态, 当然更重要的是我看到了我自己"(莫言 5)。今天, 莫 言获诺奖已过去将近十年,当作家携"十年蕴积,人事全新"的作品以期"带 给我们陌生惊喜的阅读体验"1时,我们不妨借助"他者之镜",从文学的伦 理价值、审美价值以及文学的经典化等维度,再看一看文学译介视野中的莫言, 探寻其作品在异域的新生命之旅。

<sup>1</sup> 参见 莫言: 《晚熟的人》"封底语"。北京: 人民文学出版社,2020年。

# 一、莫言作品的异域生命空间

莫言作品的译介可以追溯至20世纪80年代,1988年,英文版《中国文学》 (Chinese Literature)刊登了莫言的短篇小说《民间音乐》。同年,另一篇短 篇小说《枯河》分别被译为法语和日语,并由法国的《重见天日:中国短篇 小说集(1978-1988)》(La Remontée vers le jour, nouvelles de Chine (1978-1988))、 日本的《中国现代小说》季刊收录发表。莫言作品的海外译介之旅由此开启, 并不断延续和发展。

据人民文学出版社公众号, 莫言作品目前已被翻译成五十余种语言, 共 计两百多个外文译本(人民文学出版社)。其中不仅有英语、法语、西班牙 语、德语等西方主要语种,有日语、韩语等东方主要语种,还有塞尔维亚语、 斯洛文尼亚语、泰语等我们不太熟悉的东西方语种,乃至更为冷僻的非洲曼 丁果语及主要流通于印度和巴基斯坦部分地区的旁遮普语等。随着这些语种 的译本出现,莫言作品逐步走向世界,其海外传播的疆域不断拓展。

从地域上看, 莫言作品的翻译和传播在东西方世界基本呈现出齐头并进 的态势,西方以法国、美国、西班牙、意大利为主,东方则集中于日本、越南、 韩国。法国是目前翻译出版莫言作品最多的国家,自短篇小说《枯河》之后, 持续译介了莫言的 30 余部作品, 其中包括被公认的莫言的成名作《透明的红 萝卜》(1993),以及莫言的多部重要代表作,如《红高粱家族》(1990)、《天 堂蒜薹之歌》(1990)、《酒国》(2000)、《檀香刑》(2001)、《丰乳肥臀》(2004)、 《师傅越来越幽默》(2005)、《四十一炮》(2008)、《生死疲劳》(2009)、《蛙》(2011) 等。正如学者所观察到的,尽管莫言获诺贝尔文学奖"为其在法国的译介与 接受注入了新的动力",但法国"对莫言的兴趣由来已久"(张寅德 47), 莫言作品法译本中的绝大部分都在2012年之前就译介出版。这应该与法国自 身深厚的文学传统及对世界多元文化相对开放的接受心态分不开。美国是英 语世界中译介莫言作品最多的国家,从1980年代后期主要经由英文版《中国 文学》的零散译介,到1993年翻译出版《红高粱》,再到新世纪以来《酒国》 (2000)、《丰乳肥臀》(2004)、《生死疲劳》(2008)、《四十一炮》(2012)、 《蛙》(2014)等多部长篇小说的翻译,莫言作品在美国得到了持续关注。 无论从译介开始的时间,还是从近30部的译本数量来看,日本都可以说是世 界范围内对莫言作品关注最多、接受最深入的国家之一,莫言的大部分作品 在其获诺贝尔文学奖之前便已有日译本。除长篇小说外,日本对莫言的中短 篇小说也十分重视,翻译出版了《来自中国农村——莫言短篇小说集》(1991)、 《怀抱鲜花的女人》(1992)、《师傅越来越幽默——莫言自选中短篇集》(2002)、 《白狗秋千架——莫言自选短篇集》(2003)等多部小说集。

从社会学角度看,翻译场域中的象征资本对文学译介与传播具有重要作 用。这一点在莫言作品的外译中有明显体现。若考察上述莫言作品的主要译 介国,可以发现,其译者群体较为稳定,包括法国的杜特莱(Noël Dutrait) 和尚德兰(Chantal Chen-Andro)、瑞典的陈安娜(Anna Gustafsson Chen)、 美国的葛浩文(Howard Goldblatt)、日本的藤井省三和吉田富夫、越南的陈 廷宪和陈忠喜等等。他们不仅是翻译家,也是热爱中国文学、多年致力于中 国文学研究的汉学家。如杜特莱长期从事中国语言文学的教学与研究,对中 国当代文学的总体特征与发展进程有深刻了解和全面把握, 是公认的中国当 代文学最重要的法译者之一; 葛浩文的文学翻译与文学研究并驾齐驱、相辅 相成,被夏志清先生誉为"公认的中国现代、当代文学之首席翻译家",因 在中国文学译介上的显著成就而获得"美国文学翻译家协会年度翻译奖""古 根海姆基金"等多项荣誉: 藤井省三是著名的中国文学研究专家、文学批评家、 日本汉学界最重要的学者之一,他的鲁迅研究在国际具有广泛影响。此外, 莫言作品的出版方同样表现出权威和相对稳定两大特征,在英语世界是哥伦 比亚大学出版社、芝加哥大学出版社等知名大学出版社及企鹅出版集团等大 型商业出版机构;在法国,出版"巨头"瑟伊出版社几乎包揽了莫言作品的 所有法译本。再者, 文学奖项也是翻译场域中不容忽视的象征资本。在获诺 贝尔文学奖之前, 莫言在域外获得了多个文学奖项: 2001年《酒国》获法国 洛尔•巴塔庸外国文学奖,2003年《檀香刑》 获越南作家协会的"翻译文学奖": 2004 年获法兰西艺术与文学骑士勋章: 2005 年获意大利诺尼诺国际文学奖: 2006年获日本福冈亚洲文化奖; 2008年《生死疲劳》获第一届美国纽曼华语 文学奖; 2011 年获韩国万海文学奖。上述奖项多为其所在国中享有最高荣誉 的文学奖项, 在这些象征资本的推动下, 莫言逐步赢得了更多的国际关注与 认可。值得注意的是,莫言所获国际奖项正好分布在作为莫言作品译介重镇 的法国、美国、意大利、日本、越南和韩国、这并非简单的巧合、而是颇为 有力地说明了象征资本在文学传播与接受中的重要意义。同时,译介与获奖 之间的很可能存在的互动关系也揭示出,翻译活动对作家与作品在异域新生 命的构建具有深刻影响。

# 二、阐释参照与莫言作品的经典化

经由译介, 草言作品得以讲入世界多元文化空间, 这既意味着草言获得 国际认可的可能性,也意味着其作品将不断遭遇来自不同地域、不同文化的 他者目光。在世界文学场域内,无论文本的传播与接受,还是作品"来世的 生命"的构建,其中起决定性作用的,往往不是普通读者的阅读,而首先是 文学、翻译和批评等各界的阐释与评论。

"经典的确认不仅体现了多数人对文学价值的判断和他们对文学流传的 良好愿望,也体现了在不同历史时期多数人的审美价值观念与评价文学的道 德意志"(聂珍钊140)。因此,文学的经典化过程取决于历史性的集体观念 和意志。若考察世界范围内对莫言作品的译介及相关评论,便不难发现,世

界文学经典视域下凸显某种集体认同的参照式解读是莫言作品国际阐释中的 一条重要路径。2012年诺贝尔文学奖公布之际,诺奖评委会表示: "莫言将 现实和幻想、历史和社会角度结合在一起。他创作中的世界令人联想起福克 纳和马尔克斯作品的融合,同时又在中国传统文学和口头文学中寻找到一个 出发点"(中国新闻网)。除了提及福克纳和马尔克斯,诺奖的授奖词还在 概括莫言的文学特质时,将他比作文艺复兴时期法国伟大的人文主义作家拉 伯雷和18世纪英国著名讽刺作家斯威夫特。实际上,早在莫言获诺贝尔文学 奖之前,甚至莫言作品的海外译介之旅刚刚开启时,通过参照阐释的方式对 莫言作品进行的解读和评价就已经出现。如学者所观察到的,正是在最早译 介莫言作品的日本,评论者首先将莫言与世界文学经典作家联系在一起加以 阐释。1989年,藤井省三在日本杂志发表《中国的加西亚·马尔克斯——莫言》 一文,并就《红高粱家族》评价道: "高密平原的男女老幼的体内奔腾着如 红高粱果实一般鲜红的热血,这腔热血不时喷涌而出。莫言描绘了他们不屈 服、果敢的生活方式。这个异想天开、拍案惊奇的世界比起马尔克斯的杰作《百 年孤独》中描写的马孔多小镇和布恩迪亚一族的兴亡故事可以说有过之而无 不及"(林敏洁 101)。今天回顾来看,藤井省三通过类比马尔克斯来解读莫 言的作品,并明确指出莫言的写作具有"魔幻现实主义"风格,无疑是很有 见地的。在《为什么读经典》中,卡尔维诺(Italo Calvino)对"经典"进行 定义时指出:对于一部经典作品,人们"一下子就认出它在众多经典作品的 系谱中的位置"(卡尔维诺7)。可以说,将莫言作品置于世界经典文学谱系 中加以定位和解读,不仅在参照中准确把握莫言文学创作的特点,也通过世 界文学的视域拓展了莫言作品的阐释空间,对其经典化进程同样是一种有力 的推动。

此外,特别值得关注的是,在对莫言作品的参照式解读中,各国大都倾 向于寻找莫言作品与本国民族文学传统的共通之处。在法国,"出版商会毫 不犹豫地将'莫言:中国的加西亚·马尔克斯','《丰乳肥臀》:中国版 《百年孤独》'字眼印上封面"(张寅德 49),但同时,如研究者所指出的, "在法国读者看来,莫言作品还具有着某些法国文学的特质,他们在莫言对历 史的思考和描述方式中还看到了文艺复兴时期重要的人文主义作家拉伯雷的 影子。在法国,拉伯雷被认为是民间诙谐文化和荒诞讽刺文学的代表,而在 《丰乳肥臀》这幅令人目眩的中国历史画卷中,莫言富于创造性的、气势磅 礴、激情澎湃的语言,讽刺夸张的描写,民间故事的风格,对荒谬现象的有 力批判都不禁令法国评论者联想到拉伯雷的《巨人传》"(杭零 12)。在意 大利,《生死疲劳》中"对在地狱里被牛头马面拷打的西门闹这位主要人物 的描写,让意大利读者联想起了但丁在《神曲•地狱》篇里描写的恶魔"(芭 芭拉 30)。在俄罗斯,评论界则关注到莫言小说与 20 世纪中期苏联乡村小说 的相似之处。文学评论家邦达连科认为: "《酒国》无论'从名称上',还 是'从内容上',都更多地指向'俄罗斯',而非'中国'。作为一名乡土 文学作家, 莫言的作品与苏联作家阿斯塔菲耶夫和阿•伊万诺夫颇有相似之处, 他的《丰乳肥臀》很容易让俄罗斯读者联想起伊万诺夫的《永恒的呼唤》"(杨 明明 40)。不论是思想内容共通,还是文学特质相近,这种将外国文学和本 土文学联系在一起的比较阐释一方面表明莫言作品在各国读者中引起了普遍 共鸣,另一方面也经由比较阐释更激发出文学接受中的某种亲近感,因而同 样有效促进了莫言作品在世界文学中的经典化。在泰戈尔看来,"寻求个别 的人性与人类普遍人性之间的联系"正是"人类灵魂的本性",在《世界文学》 一文中他写道: "当人性的光辉穿越重重障碍得到充分展示时,我们就倍感 欢欣,我们所发现的东西就是不断延伸的自我"(泰戈尔 56)。"不断延伸 的自我"不仅是读者心灵与作品所构建的文学世界之间的交融,深层次而言 也是民族文学与世界文学在相互碰撞中生成的新的意义, 一部经典作品的价 值或许正在于此。

从诺贝尔文学奖的授奖词到不同接受语境对莫言作品的解读与评论、参 照式的阐释让我们看到莫言因其具有普遍价值的文学创作而被纳入世界文学 经典谱系中,但世界文学"不会导向一种超然的普遍性"(丹穆若什312), 文化间的差异、民族文学的特质以及作家的独特风格都是无法被忽视或被遮 蔽的现实存在。可以说, "一个作家在异域能否真正产生影响,特别是产生 持久的影响,最重要的是要树立起自己的形象"(许钧、宋学智184)。就文 学层面而言,世界文学视域中的文学审美需求应被理解为作品普遍价值与文 学特质的融合。就译介层面而言,"翻译具有内在的伦理属性和伦理目标, 而尊重他者、尊重差异正是实现翻译伦理目标的基础与核心"(刘云虹、许 钧 74),这就意味着文学译介应尽可能保留和传达原作的语言文化异质性。 莫言作品通过译介在世界范围内得到广泛传播与接受, 其异域的新生命构建 中必然带有属于莫言的独特文学印记。美国学者托马斯·英奇(M. Thomas Inge)指出: "莫言不仅继承了福克纳和马尔克斯的艺术视野和手法,还用莫 言自己独特的方式发扬了下去"(王汝蕙、张富贵 167)。俄罗斯评论界普遍 关注到"莫言文学创作所表现出的那种独立性",认为莫言尽管受到多位经 典作家的影响,但他"不仅没有丧失自我,还成功地将自己确立为一位具有 高度独立性、强大有力却又绝不与人雷同的作家,他创造了令人称奇的独特 艺术世界,塑造了众多多姿多彩、有血有肉的人物形象"(杨明明 40)。汉 学家叶果夫特别强调: "他既非卡夫卡,亦非福克纳,也非马尔克斯,他就 是——莫言"(王树福 157)。这样的评价在莫言作品的国际接受中可以说 具有一定的代表性,也让我们认识到,正是在既寻求共鸣又凸显个性的阐释 参照中, 莫言作品打开了属于自己的文学经典化之旅。文学经典之所以不朽, 并非仅仅出于权威和敬意,实际上更因为一代又一代读者真挚的喜爱,而那 种熟悉又陌生的阅读体验或许最能激发心灵的愉悦。

# 三、原作生命丰富性的拓展

经由译介,文学作品获得超越时空的新的存在形式,进入新的生命历程。 在不同国家、不同时代的读者的阅读过程中,文本意义理解与阐释的可能性 不断拓展,文学作品从"可能的存在"转化为"现实的存在",从而拥有持 续生成的鲜活生命。诺贝尔文学奖得主、法国作家勒克莱齐奥在《法国文学 经典译从》的"致中国读者"中写下这样一句话: "这一部部伟大的作品超 越时间与空间,向你们敞开,期盼你们阅读,而通过阅读,你们参与了再创造, 有助于这些经典之作在你们伟大的国家获得新的生命"(勒克莱齐奥)。文 学经典之所以能抵抗时间和空间的阻隔而焕发出持久的生命力, 一个根本的 原因就是,通过读者的创造性阅读,作品在无数个独特的对话关系中得到新 的理解与共鸣,其内涵、价值与影响也因此始终处于生成与拓展之中。从中 外文学交流史来看, 无论外国文学进入中国, 还是中国文学走向国外, 唯有 与读者相遇, 与多元文化相互碰撞, 作品的生命才会在延续和拓展中有力地 绽放。莫言作品的域外传播也同样如此。在五十余种语言、两百多个外文译 本构成的阅读空间里,各国读者带着自身独特的文化传统、审美期待和个体 经验,以各自不同的方式进入莫言的文学世界,有理解与阐释,有认同与赞赏, 也不免有误解与批判。如学者所言,世界文学是"一种阅读模式"(丹穆若 什 309), 且必然与"主体文化的价值取向和需求相关"(丹穆若什 311), 那么不管理解还是误解,认同还是批判,译介所促成的更为多元的阅读在根 本上为莫言作品异域新生命的不断丰富创造了条件。

由于中西方意识形态存在显著差异, 西方读者对莫言作品乃至整个中国 当代文学的接受中存在某种刻意突出作品意识形态内涵或从政治角度进行解 读的倾向。虽然这一事实不可否认也不应忽略,但就总体而言,各国评论界 并没有过多纠缠于莫言的所谓"体制内作家"或"官方作家"身份,而是很 大程度上聚焦于文学本身来阅读、阐释与评价莫言的作品, 尤其彰显出莫言 作品的伦理价值与审美价值,同时,多元视角也为理解莫言拓展了新的可能。 我们认为,至少有以下两方面值得特别关注。

首先,注重莫言作品对普遍人性的探求与展现。当歌德提出"世界文学" 的概念时,他意欲彰显的是一种超越民族的文化情怀。在莫言作品的国际传 播中,这样的文化情怀对于发现并把握莫言作品的文学价值具有重要作用, 因为作品能否获得"文学的'国际化'特质与世界性意义",其决定性因素 之一正是"作品中所包含的超越民族和地域限制的'人类性'共同价值的含 量"(张清华2)。梳理莫言作品外译的相关讨论,可以发现,无论在法国、 日本等最早开始译介莫言作品的国家,还是俄罗斯等在莫言作品的接受中相 对滞后的国家, 莫言小说所探求并展现的普遍人性是评论界理解莫言、构建 莫言作品文学价值的一个重点。这并不难理解,从文学伦理批评来看,文学

经典具有伦理特性。文学作品之所以能成为经典,原因不完全在于"陌生性"、 "原创性"或"神性与人性的爱恨纠葛"(聂珍钊141),而更因为其中所蕴 含的伦理价值,也就是说,"文学是否成为经典是由其伦理价值所决定的" (聂珍钊142)。法国汉学家、莫言作品的主要法译者杜特莱长期关注中国当 代文学并有相当精深的研究,他认为,"莫言的作品内容丰富,中国当下社 会中的诸多主题——例如社会关系、腐败、传统的印记等等,他都给予关注, 表现出了人类与社会关系的复杂性",不仅如此,更为重要的是,莫言"总 是从人性的角度来思考和写作这些问题"(崔悦)。正是由于这种"探测人 类的灵魂"(刘云虹、杜特莱40)的勇气与追求,莫言作品引发读者对人的 存在以及人在特定境遇中的伦理选择进行深刻思索并从中受到教益。文学翻 译是文学接受的一个特别而极为重要的方面,作为译介活动中具有伦理身份 意识的主体,译者对其所译作家作品的深入理解与阐释往往具有导向性作用, 积极推动着原作新生命在目的语语境中的丰富与拓展。在日本,莫言作品的 两位主要译者井口晃和吉田富夫同样十分关注莫言作品中对芸芸众生的存在、 对人类本性的不懈探索与深刻揭示。井口晃在评论《枯河》时指出:这部短 篇小说"既不是对文革时期的凄惨和权力的残酷进行告发,也不是揭露中国 农村残存的'黑暗面'",而是"通过一名最终离世的少年的所看所想,描 写了人生中无可避免的阴郁和无法估量、难以理解的黑暗"(林敏洁 99)。 吉田富夫则借《丰乳肥臀》的译后记表达了自己对小说的理解,在他看来, 不应对作品进行过多的政治性解读,因为"'丰乳肥臀'所象征的'母性' 才是这个长篇故事的核心内在"(朱芬127)。俄罗斯评论界认为《丰乳肥臀》 与肖洛霍夫的《静静的顿河》具有多方面的相似性,《丰乳肥臀》的译者、 俄罗斯汉学家叶果夫特别指出,两位作家在创作中"都将关注的焦点集中于 战争带给普通人的痛苦与牺牲,而这一点在当代中国文学中则是十分罕见的" (杨明明40)。

其次,注重莫言作品在叙事技巧上的革新。莫言自称是"一个讲故事的人", 认为"文学最重要的、区别于其他艺术门类的一点,就是它是语言的艺术", 因此他十分注重通过文学叙事技巧"把故事讲得引人入胜,讲得韵味无穷" (莫言、刘琛 10)。仅以《酒国》的国际接受为例,便能清晰地看到,这一 点在莫言作品的海外传播中引发了深刻共鸣。《酒国》是莫言小说中极具文 本实验意义和文体价值的一部,在国内出版后并不被看好,没有引起评论界 和研究界的关注。然而,《酒国》的异域新生命却是另一番景象,它不仅受 到多国读者的青睐,并且获得了法国洛尔•巴塔庸外国文学奖。为什么《酒国》 在国内外的反响有如此差异?一个重要原因在于,各国尤其是具有深厚文学 传统的欧美国家对作品的文学特质与艺术创新更为敏感,普遍注重和欣赏莫 言在叙事技巧上的革新。这一点,从法国洛尔•巴塔庸外国文学奖对《酒国》 的授奖词即可窥见一斑:"由中国杰出小说家莫言原创、优秀汉学家杜特莱

翻译成法文的《酒国》,是一个空前绝后的实验性文体。其思想之大胆,情 节之奇幻,人物之鬼魅,结构之新颖,都超出了法国乃至世界读者的阅读经验。 这样的作品不可能被广泛阅读,但却会为刺激小说的生命力而持久地发挥效 应"(人民网)。我们看到,法国评论界充分肯定《酒国》在文体上的实验 性,并强调这样的实验性文体可以令小说焕发出不竭的生命力。法国主流媒 体也持相同观点,对莫言在《酒国》中展现出的精湛艺术技巧大加赞赏,《世 界报》的评论特别指出莫言"没有使用刻板的语言"来揭露社会问题,相反, "他将寓言、虚幻故事、道家思想和荒诞离奇融为一炉;他游刃有余地使用 镜像效果,模糊了现实与想象的界限"(Douin)。美国读者和媒体对《酒国》 的评价中也不吝褒奖之词,对其中展现出的叙事革新与魅力尤为关注。莫言 作品的主要英译者、汉学家葛浩文高度评价《酒国》中丰富而极具想象力的 创作手法,认为"之前没有任何小说可以让读者惊喜地发现如此聚集的喜剧性、 创新性与技巧的灵活性"(葛浩文637)。《纽约时报》有书评"赞赏这部小 说'从功夫小说、侦探小说、中国神话、美国西部小说和魔幻现实主义小说 中借鉴多种叙述元素而形成的一个迷人的后现代的大杂烩'"(张晶 170)。 德国著名作家马丁·瓦尔泽(Martin Walser)在读了《酒国》之后,直言"它 是非常丰富的一部作品",并高度评价了小说的结构和艺术创作方式(魏格 林 79)。值得一提的是,《酒国》的国际评价深深地影响了国内文学批评界 对这部小说的认知,正如有学者所指出的,当葛浩文、杜特莱、叶果夫等重 要的汉学家都称赞《酒国》是莫言最好的小说或"小说中的小说"之后,国 内的一些文学批评家,即便此前并不这么看,也大多认同了这个看法(孟繁 华25)。

在中外不同思想文化的相遇、碰撞与融合中,莫言作品以其深刻的思想 与伦理价值以及独特的文学魅力赢得了属于自己的崭新生命。随着新的理解 与阐释不断出现,新的视域不断生成,原作新生命也处于日益丰富的历史进 程中。当然,各国读者对莫言作品的阅读和接受不可能采取单一的文学视角, 加之莫言小说强烈的现实性和社会批判性,探查中国的历史与社会现实同样 也构成莫言的国际解读中一条不容忽视的路径。一方面,异域读者期待通过 莫言作品对中国近现代及当代历史的书写走进中国的历史与社会, 另一方面, 这种深入了解中国的意愿又激发着读者对莫言小说的阅读与理解,而就阅读 参与文本生命创造的根本意义而言,这无疑也推动了莫言作品新生命的不断 丰富与拓展。

#### 结语

不可否认,获得诺贝尔文学奖给莫言带来了巨大的国际声誉,也有力提 升了莫言作品的国际影响力。但从以上的梳理和分析中可以看出,通过译介 及其所拓展的阅读空间, 莫言作品的国际传播早在20世纪80、90年代便已 形成并持续推进。而在跨文化的多元阐释中,莫言作品逐步实现其经典化, 在世界文学大花园中展现出更为蓬勃的生命活力。同样不可否认的是,莫言 作品在走向世界的过程中遭遇了很多困难,有文学接受中受到的冷遇、误解、 质疑甚至批判,更有中外语言文化隔阂给文学翻译本身带来的无法完全逾越 的障碍,中国文学真正走向世界必然经历一个漫长的历程。莫言作品的主要 韩语译者朴明爱曾说: "中国文学若要占据世界文学的中心,要走的路尚有 多远,这完全取决于以莫言为代表的当代中国文人手中的笔"(朴明爱 4)。 究竟还有多远的路要走或许无法准确预计,但可以肯定的是,这不仅取决于 作家们手中的创作之笔,也同样取决于为世界文学与文化的多元交流而不懈 努力的翻译者们手中的译笔。

#### **Works Cited**

芭芭拉: "在意大利看莫言", 《海南师范大学学报(社会科学版)》6(2014): 29-31。

[Babara. "Mo Yan Studies in Italy." Journal of Hainai Normal University (Social Sciences) 6(2014): 29-31.]

崔悦: "法国热评莫言获诺贝尔文学奖", 人民网。2012年10月13日。2020年10月19日(http:// world.people.com.cn/n/2012/1013/c1002-19253432.html

[Cui Yue. "Warm welcome from France on Mo Yan's winning Nobel Literature Prize." People, November 13th, 2012. Consulted on October 19th, 2020. <a href="http://world.people.com.cn/n/2012/1013/">http://world.people.com.cn/n/2012/1013/</a> c1002-19253432.html>]

丹穆若什:《什么是世界文学?》, 查明建、宋明炜等译。北京:北京大学出版社, 2014年。

[Damrosch, David. What is World Literature? Trans. Zha Mingjian, Song Mingwei. Beijing: Peking University Press, 2014.]

Douin, Jean-Luc. "Mo Yan et les ogres du Parti." Le Monde, March 31st, 2000.

高旭东等: "诺贝尔文学奖与中国:从鲁迅到莫言",《山东社会科学》2(2013):43-53。

[Gao Xudong, et al. "Nobel Literature Prize and China: from Lu Xun to Mo Yan." Shandong Social Sciences 2(2013): 43-53.]

葛浩文:"作者与译者:一种不安、互惠互利,且偶尔脆弱的关系",王敬慧译,《葛浩文翻译研究》, 刘云虹主编。南京:南京大学出版社,2019年。

[Goldblatt, Howard. "Author and Translator: An Uneasy, Mutually Rewarding, Sometimes Fragile Relationship." Trans. Wang Jinghui. in Studies on Howard Goldblatt's Translations. Ed. Liu Yunhong. Nanjing: Nanjing UP, 2019.]

杭零: "莫言在法国的翻译与接受",《东方翻译》6(2012):9-13。

[Hang Ling. "Translation and Reception of Mo Yan in France." East Journal of Translation 6(2012): 9-13.]

姜智芹: 《莫言作品海外传播研究》。南京: 南京大学出版社, 2019年。

[Jiang Zhiqin. Studies on the Communication of Mo Yan's Writings Abroad. Nanjing: Nanjing University

Press, 2019.]

- 卡尔维诺: 《为什么读经典》, 黄灿然、李桂蜜译。南京: 译林出版社, 2012年。
- [Calvino, Italo. Why Read the Classics? Trans. Huang Canran, Li Guimi. Nanjing: Yilin Press, 2012.]
- 勒克莱齐奥:《诺贝尔文学奖得主、法国作家勒克莱齐奥致中国读者》,许钧译。圣埃克苏佩里: 《小王子》, 刘云虹译。南京: 南京大学出版社, 2017年。
- [Le Clézio, Jean-Marie Gustave. "Address from Nobel Literature Prize Laureate, French Writer Le Clézio to Chinese Readers." Trans. Xu Jun. in Saint-Exupéry. The Little Prince. Trans. Liu Yunhong. Nanjing: Nanjing University Press, 2017.]
- 李建军: "直议莫言与诺奖", 《文学报》, 2013年1月10日。
- [Li Jianjun. "A straightforward remark on Mo Yan and Nobel Prize." Literature Journal, 10th January 2013.]
- 林敏洁: "莫言文学在日本的接受与传播——兼论其与获诺贝尔文学奖的关系",《文学评论》 6 (2015): 98-109。
- [Lin Minjie. "Reception and Diffusion of Mo Yan's Literary Works in Japan—And the Relationship with His Winning Nobel Prize." Literary Review 6(2015): 98-109.]
- 刘云虹、杜特莱: "关于中国文学对外译介的对话", 《小说评论》5(2016): 37-43。
- [Liu Yunhong, Noël Dutrait, "Dialogue on Overseas Translation of Chinese Literature." Novel Review 5(2016): 37-43.]
- 刘云虹、许钧: "异的考验——关于翻译伦理的对谈", 《外国语》2(2016): 70-77。
- [Liu Yunhong, Xu Jun, "The Experience of the Foreign: An Interview on Translation Ethics." Journal of Foreign Languages 2(2016): 70-77.]
- 孟繁华: "中国当代文学经典化的国际语境——以莫言为例",《文艺研究》4(2015): 17-25。
- [Meng Fanhua. "International Context for Canonization of Chinese Contemporary Literature—On Example of Mo Yan." Literature & Art Studies 4(2015): 17-25.]
- 莫言、刘琛:"把'高密东北乡'安放在世界文学的版图上——莫言先生文学访谈录",《东岳论丛》 10 (2012): 5-10.
- [Mo Yan, Liu Chen, "Spotting 'Dongbei Village of Gaomi City' on the map of World Literature—An Interview with Mr. Mo Yan." Dongyue Tribune 10(2012): 5-10.]
- 莫言: "在'祝贺莫言获诺贝尔文学奖座谈会'上的发言",《艺术评论》11(2012): 4-5。
- [Mo Yan, "Speech on the Symposium for Celebrating Mo Yan's Winning Nobel Literature Prize." Art Criticism, 11(2012): 4-5.]
- 聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。
- [Nie Zhenzhao. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]
- 朴明爱: "扎根异土的异邦人——莫言作品在韩国", 《作家》7(2013): 3-9。
- [Park Myung-ae. "A Foreign People Rooted in Foreign Land—Mo Yan's Works in Korea." Writer Magazine 7(2013): 3-9.]

- "莫言获诺贝尔文学奖 盘点莫言曾获文学奖项",人民网。2012年10月11日。2020年9月 19 ∃ ⟨http://culture.people.com.cn/n/2012/1011/c87423-19234738.html⟩
- ["Mo Yan Awarded Nobel Prize in Literature, A Brief Review on His Literary Prizes." People, October 11th, 2012. Consulted on September19th, 2020.<a href="http://culture.people.com.cn/n/2012/1011/c87423-1011">http://culture.people.com.cn/n/2012/1011/c87423-1011</a>. 19234738.html>]
- 人民文学出版社, "莫言新作《晚熟的人》即将由人民文学出版社出版 | 再叙故乡人事", 人 民文学出版社公众号,2020年7月26日。
- [People's Literature Publishing House, "Mo Yan's Latest Book A Late Bloomer will be published by People's Literature Publishing House | Hometown and Folks Revisited." People's Literature Publishing House Official Account, July 26<sup>th</sup>, 2020.]
- 泰戈尔:"世界文学",《世界文学理论读本》,达姆罗什、刘洪涛、尹星主编。北京:北京 大学出版社,2013年。
- [Tagore, Rabindranath. "World Literature." Theories of World Literature: A Reader. Eds. David Damrosch, Liu Hongtao, Yin Xing. Beijing: Peking UP, 2013.]
- 王汝蕙、张富贵: "莫言小说获奖后在美国的译介与传播",《文艺争鸣》1(2018):163-170。
- [Wang Ruhui, Zhang Fugui. "Translation, Introduction and Diffusion of Mo Yan's works after being awarded Nobel Prize in Literature." Wen yi zheng ming 1 (2018): 163-170.]
- 王树福: "形象、镜像与幻象: 莫言在俄罗斯的接受症候",《中国比较文学》1(2018): 118, 154-71。
- [Wang Shufu. "Image, Mirror and Illusion: Mo Yan's Reception in Russia." Comparative Literature in China 1(2018): 118, 154-71.]
- 魏格林: "沟通和对话——德国作家马丁·瓦尔泽与莫言在慕尼黑的一次面谈",《上海文学》 3 (2010) : 78-81.
- [Weigelin-Schwiedrzik, Suzanne. "Communication and Dialogue—A Face-to-face Discussion in Munich between German writer Martin Walser and Mo Yan." Shanghai Literature 3(2010): 78-81.]
- 吴子林: "'重回叙拉古?'——论文学'超轶政治'之可能",《莫言:全球视野与本土经验》, 张志忠、贺立华主编。济南:山东大学出版社,2014年。
- [Wu Zilin. "Back to Syracuse?"—On Possibilities of Literature as 'Transcendental Politics'." Mo Yan: Global Vision and Chinese Experience. Eds. Zhang Zhizhong, He Lihua. Jinan: Shandong University Press, 2014.]
- 杨明明: "'不语者': 莫言的俄罗斯式解读", 《小说评论》6(2013): 37-43。
- [Yang Mingming. "'No-word man': A Russian Reading of Mo Yan." Novel Review 6 (2013): 37-43.]
- 张晶: "框架理论视野下美国主流报刊对莫言小说的传播与接受",《当代作家评论》3(2015): 166-179。
- [Zhang Jing. "Diffusion and Reception of Mo Yan's Novel on American Mainstream Press—A Study in

- the Perspective of Frame Theory." Contemporary Writers Review 3(2015): 166-179.]
- 张清华: "关于文学性与中国经验的问题 —— 从德国汉学教授顾彬的讲话说开去", 《文艺争 鸣》10(2007):1-3。
- [Zhang Qinghua. "On Literariness and Chinese Experience—From German Sinologist Wolfgang Kubin's Speech." Wen yi zheng ming 10(2007): 1-3.]
- 张寅德: "莫言在法国:翻译、传播与接受",刘海清译,《文艺争鸣》10(2016):47-55。
- [Zhang Yinde. "Mo Yan in France: Translation, Diffusion and Reception." Trans. Liu Haiqing. Wen yi zheng ming 10(2016): 47-55.]
- "诺奖评委会: 莫言令人联想福克纳和马尔克斯的融合",中国新闻网。2012年10月11日。 2020 年 10 月 11 日。〈http://www.chinanews.com/gj/2012/10-11/4241584.shtml〉
- ["Nobel Committee: Mo Yan Reminds Us of a Fusion of William Faulkner and Gabriel García Márquez." Chinanews, October 11th, 2012. Consulted on October 11th, 2020. <a href="http://www. chinanews.com/gj/2012/10-11/4241584.shtml ]
- 朱芬: "莫言在日本的译介", 《中国比较文学》4(2014): 120-132。
- [Zhu Fen. "Mo Yan's Translation in Japan." Comparative Literature in China 4 (2014): 120-132.]

# 林纾小说翻译过程中的伦理选择与译者伦理身份 Lin Shu's Ethical Selection and Ethical Identity in His Translating of Western Novels

## 陈 勇 (Chen Yong)

研究成果。

内容摘要:本文考察林纾面对西方小说中的伦理事实与晚清社会伦理秩序之间可能产生的冲突所做的伦理选择,并探讨其背后的译者伦理身份。研究发现,林纾采用了保留、替换、改写、删除和增添五种伦理选择形式,对西方伦理事实既有保留也有删改。这是由于林纾"中体西用"的伦理身份使然,即他主要是传统伦理捍卫者同时也是维新派,这种身份使得林译小说既改写了原文的伦理结构和人物的斯芬克斯因子,也呼应和建构了目的语社会的伦理禁忌和伦理秩序。同时,这种身份本身的悖论导致林纾伦理观的悖论性和林译小说伦理效果的悖论性。

关键词: 林译小说; 伦理选择; 伦理身份; 翻译; 中体西用作者简介: 陈勇, 文学博士, 天津工业大学人文学院讲师, 研究方向为翻译理论与实践、批评话语分析。本文系天津市哲学社会科学规划资助项目"译介学视阈下中央文献翻译的话语研究"【项目编号: TJWW17-011】的阶段性

**Title:** Lin Shu's Ethical Selections and Ethical Identity in His Translating of Western Novels

Abstract: This paper analyzes Lin Shu's choice in the potential conflicts between the ethical events in Western novels he was translating and the ethical order in the target Chinese society in late Qing Dynasty, and explores his ethical identity which motivates his choices. It finds that he retains, replaces, rewrites, deletes and invents the ethical events in the source texts, resulting in both keeping and changing of Western ethics. This result is due to his identity derived from his belief "Western knowledge in service of Chinese culture," which indicates that he is primarily a defender of traditional Chinese ethics and secondarily a reformist. Consequently, his translation alters the ethical structure of and the characters' Sphinx factors in the source novels on the one hand, and echoes and constructs the ethical taboos and orders in the target society of China on the other hand. The paradox in his dual identity leads to the paradox both in his personal ethics and in the ethical effects of

the novels translated by him.

**Key words**: novels translated by Lin Shu; ethical selections; ethical identity; translation; Western knowledge in service of Chinese culture

Author: Chen Yong, Ph.D., is Lecturer at the School of Humanities, Tiangong University (Tianjin 300387, China). His research interests are translation theory and practice, and critical discourse analysis (Email: garychenyo@126.com).

晚清是一个"数千年未有之大变局"的时代, 欧美独具一格的诗学、伦 理、思维方式和政治观念等开始以文学作品为载体涌入中国,引发中西思想 激烈碰撞。在文学所表征的各个社会生活领域中,伦理可能是碰撞最激烈的 领域之一, 因为中国传统的儒家伦理与西方的伦理在许多方面是迥异的, 而 且伦理本身涉及"正确"与"错误"的价值判断,一方认为是正确的伦理关 系在另一方看来可能是错误的,反之亦然。这两套伦理系统在一些方面"针 尖对麦芒"。小说可能是最能生动和充分体现伦理道德的文学体裁之一,因 为它"非常详细地、全面地反映社会生活中各种角色的价值关系"(韦恩•布 斯 3)。小说的翻译从某种程度上来说就是两套伦理系统发生冲突的过程,对 其进行研究,可以窥见译者的伦理选择及其背后的伦理身份。本文借鉴文学 伦理学批评的相关理论和术语,以林纾翻译的外国小说(以下简称"林译小说") 为研究语料(以《伽茵小传》和《巴黎茶花女遗事》为主,兼及其它小说), 归纳翻译过程中伦理选择的类型,并将伦理选择放在当时的伦理环境下,结 合林纾所写译序、跋和文章,探讨这些选择背后的译者"中体西用"伦理身份。

## 一、林纾的伦理选择

文学伦理学批评是一种从伦理学角度对文学作品进行阅读、分析和解读 的批评方法,强调文学的伦理价值和文学的教诲功能(Chen Lizhen 404)。 这一理论的创立者聂珍钊教授指出,伦理选择(ethical selection)是文学伦理 学批评的一个基本概念,它一方面是指人的道德选择,即通过选择,达到道 德成熟和完美; 另一方面是指对于两个或更多道德选项的选择, 不同的选择 结果具有不同的伦理价值(Ross 12)。人物通过伦理选择将自己的伦理意识 转化成伦理行动(尚必武 26)。选择的主体可以是文学作品中的任何人,选 择的对象是"人性因子与兽性因子的不同组合"(聂珍钊,"文学伦理学批 评的价值选择与理论建构"74)。本文的伦理选择是指译者在翻译过程中, 当原文中的伦理事实与目的语社会的伦理禁忌(或译者本人的伦理观)发生 冲突时,译者作出的选择。选择的主体只能是文本跨语际转换过程中的译者, 选择的对象是原文的伦理事实和目的语社会的伦理禁忌(或译者本人的伦理 观)。伦理选择往往取决于伦理身份(ethical identity),不同身份的人可能 会做出不同选择(Ma Xiaoli and Hao Xiangjian 504)。在文学伦理学批评中,

伦理身份泛指人的各种身份。由于身份是人的独有特征,其主体是人,因此 人的身份就是伦理身份(聂珍钊,《文学伦理学批评导论》264)。本文的伦 理身份是指译者的伦理身份,即译者的各种身份中,能影响其在原文的伦理 事实和目的语社会的伦理禁忌(或译者本人的伦理观)之间做出取舍的身份。

林纾所译西方小说的原文中,各人物已经在当时的伦理环境(ethical environment) 下做出了伦理选择,形成了伦理事实,但在翻译过程中译者考 虑到这些伦理事实可能会与目的语社会的伦理禁忌(ethical taboos)或伦理规 范(ethical norms)发生激烈冲突(或者与译者自己的伦理观不一致),会在 二者之间做出取舍,进行伦理选择。他的伦理选择大致有如下几种类型。

## (一)保留

林纾将原文中一些可能违背目的语社会伦理禁忌的伦理事实忠实地翻译 出来,主要涉及孝道、女德、女权、宗教等方面。例如,伽茵和马克等女性 大胆主动地追求爱情、伽茵未婚先孕有了私生女、洛克对伽茵表白时的"女 尊男卑"等情节,虽然有别于甚至颠覆了中国传统的男方主动、女方被动的 爱情模式和男尊女卑的性别关系,但在译文中都保留了下来。《伽茵小传》 原著第25章中,伽茵知道自己怀孕后,难以入睡,思前顾后,焦虑万分:

原文: Moreover, as time went on, a new terror took her, that, vague in the beginning, grew week by week more definite and more dreadful. At first she could scarcely believe it, for somehow such a thing had never entered into her calculations; but soon she was forced to acknowledge it as a fact, an appalling, unalterable fact, which, as yet secret to herself, must shortly become patent to the whole world. The night that the truth came home to her without the possibility of further doubt was perhaps the most terrible which she ever spent. For some hours she thought that she must go mad: she wept, she prayed, she called upon the name of her lover, who, although he was the author of her woe, in some mysterious fashion had now grown doubly dear to her, till at last sleep or insensibility brought her relief. But sleep passes with the darkness, and she awoke to find this new spectre standing by her bedside and to know that there it must always stand till the end came. (Haggard 265)

林译: 且近日新有所触,为事至丑,前犹模糊,近乃日形其确,其事初 止一身知之, 思及后日, 则必哄传不可掩讳。方第一日, 自觉有身时, 夜中焦灼, 至不能贴席; 思极而哭, 或呼天自救, 或屡呼亨利之名。明知亨利为己祸根, 而思及恩意,则又热血如沸。既而酣睡,然睡即能酣,而祸根终无自脱之日。 睡后尚有醒时,忧从中来,如何断绝?(哈葛德 240-41)

林译虽稍有改动,但将源文信息基本译出,并在译文中将伽茵焦虑的缘

由即"一个不可改变的事实" (unalterable fact) 表达得更为明确和具体: "自 觉有身"(即得知怀孕)。这一选择也许在一定程度上体现了译者对婚恋自 由的认可,因为未婚先孕在封建时期的中国是大逆不道的事情,但林纾选择 将它如实译出。未婚先孕虽是"欲"的结果,却也是"情"的自然发展,情 和孕都是双方的自由选择。

## (二)替换

林纾用儒家的伦理观念替换原文伦理观念,以此改造原文的伦理事实。 例如、《伽茵小传》中、伽茵为了让亨利家族摆脱困境、忍痛放弃与亨利的 感情,让他迎娶债主来文杰的女儿爱玛。来文杰为伽茵离开亨利而感到高兴, 称赞伽茵是一个勇敢的女孩: ····· he said: "but all the same you are a brave girl" (Haggard 201)。林译是: "来文杰闻言,肃然起敬曰:'此语出之忠义之肠, 老夫佩女郎盛德'"(哈葛德 162)。"勇敢"是指人敢于克服困难,大体上 属于人对于事的伦理,"忠义"和"德"主要属于人与人之间的伦理,林译将"勇 敢"译成"忠义"和"盛德",是将人对于事的伦理替换成人与人之间的伦理。

## (三)改写

林纾用儒家伦理改写原文中的西方婚恋伦理、性别伦理和形象伦理等。 例如,在《伽茵小传》中,爱伦(Ellen)在答应密而华德(Edward)的求婚 时说 "I will say yes, now and for always. I will be your wife." (Haggard 69), 林 纾将这句话译为"我今许汝, 永为君家人矣"(哈葛德 42), 他把"wife"译 为"君家人"。"君家人"一词体现了女性在父权制婚姻和家庭中的附庸地 位,她们需遵守父系、父居和父治三条伦理:子女承父姓,家庭成员以父亲 为参照中心来确定各自的称谓和身份: 子女应生活在父亲所在的家族里,而 不在母亲的家族里;父亲是一家之主,在家庭事务中具有决定权(潘红 412-13)。女性嫁入男方家庭后,就要服从于父权和夫权,沦为丈夫的附庸,成为"君 家人"。原著中,爱伦宣称"I will be your wife",是在平等、自主的婚姻伦理 秩序内,以一个独立自主女性的身份承诺成为密而华德的配偶,可是在译文 中被林纾纳入了"三从四德"的封建家庭伦理秩序中。

## (四)删除

林纾删除原文中违背儒家伦理的情节。例如,在《巴黎茶花女遗事》中, 女主人公马克年幼时曾常遭母亲虐待,母亲死时,她的伤心程度不如后来自 己的狗死时的伤心程度(Dumas 112), 林纾删除了这个情节。林纾可能认为 这有违孝道,即使母亲做法不对,子女也不应该不孝。

原著中对"欲"、性爱的描写在译文中也被删除或大幅缩减。例如,《巴 黎荼花女遗事》原著描写了亚猛在和马克的性爱过程中的感受:

原文: Oh! How strange was the night that followed! The whole of Marguerite's life seemed to be concentrated in the kisses she lavished on me. I loved her so intensely that, in the transports of my loving frenzy, I wondered whether I should not kill her so that she would never belong to anyone else.

A month of such loving, body and soul, would be enough to bury most people.

Day found us both awake. (Dumas 178-79)

林译:是夜情景甚冰冷,不可意测。(小仲马71)

林纾删除了原著中恋人之间的激情画面,仅以"是夜情景甚冰冷,不可 意测"一笔带过。

## (五)增添

通过增添一些词语或句子来表达自己的伦理观,或增加原文中并不存在 的伦理事实。

在《伽茵小传》中, 亨利与伽茵一见钟情, 私定终身, 其父在临死前再 三劝说他与家境殷实的爱玛结婚,但遭到亨利拒绝。在争执中,亨利坚定表 达了要与伽茵结婚的愿望。

原文: There had been some quarrel between Henry and his dying father, and in that quarrel her name had been mentioned. Strange as it seemed, it might even be that he had declared an intention of marrying her. (Haggard 189)

林译: 亨利情多, 必违父训, 父招不从, 必诘其拒婚之由, 叙我姓名, 亦情理所有……。(哈葛德 118)

在中国,对于父亲的临终遗言,无论赞同与否,子女往往都要认真听取 甚至遵照执行,这是"孝"的具体表现。原文的叙述是中性的,只是说亨利 与临终前的父亲发生了争吵,未对父子中的任何一方做评价,而林译却增加 了"父训"和"父招"两个词对亨利做道德评判,暗批亨利违背父命,不守 孝道。

总之, 面对原文伦理事实与目的语伦理禁忌之间的冲突, 林纾在大多数 情况下通过替换、改写、删除和增添等手段对前者进行改造,将之纳入中国 传统伦理系统,使之披上了儒家伦理的外衣,但同时也保留了部分与儒家伦 理相冲突的伦理事实。是改是留,不是任意为之,而是由林纾的伦理身份决 定的。

## 二、译者的"中体西用"伦理身份

在中西伦理冲突中, 林纾既适当地保留了西方的一些伦理事实, 为晚清 时期的中国伦理秩序注入了新鲜因素,也改造了另一些伦理事实并将其纳入 中国的传统伦理秩序。这使得他的译作广受欢迎的同时,仍遭到了保守派和 改良派的双重攻击。保守派批评他破坏了伦理道德秩序,寅半生评价道:"林

氏之所谓《伽茵小传》者,传其淫也,传其贱也,传其无耻也……"(陈平原、 夏晓虹 249)。而改良派则指责他思想太保守,梁启超(88)说:"有林纾者..... 每译一书, 辄"因文见道", 於新思想无与焉。""五四"新文化运动的旗 手们更是对林译小说中的古文形式和守旧思想大加挞伐,钱玄同(1917)斥 林纾为"桐城谬种",批评林译小说"半点儿文学的意味也没有"。可见, 保守派批其不够保守,改良派也批其不够激进,"夹"在中间的林纾未能让 任何一方完全满意。他的这个困境,只有放在当时的伦理环境下从他的伦理 身份的角度才能得到合理解释。

晚清时期,内忧外患,一方面清政府腐败无能,民愤涌动,另一方面连 遭列强欺辱,甲午海战败给蕞尔小国日本,极大震撼了中国知识分子,使他 们深感有"亡国灭种"的可能。一时间, "保种"、"陆沉"、"启蒙"等 词成了他们共同的核心词汇。林纾在自己的"救国"主题诗集《闽中新乐府》 中表达了革新图强的强烈愿望:"取法西方,以变革图强;抨击陋习,以革 新自强"。但对于如何图强,林纾与当时的许多传统文人一样,采取了"中 体西用"的态度。具体到社会伦理层面,就是要在维护由忠、孝、恩、义等 概念形成的传统伦理秩序的同时,引进西方对于"新民"和"启蒙"具有积 极意义的伦理观念,并将其纳入中国伦理秩序。林纾的伦理身份也体现出"中 体西用"的特征,即他是传统文化的坚定捍卫者,但同时也是维新派的一员。 这两种身份,一方面使得他在中西伦理冲突中作出了不同类型的伦理选择, 从而分别对原文和目的语社会产生了影响: 既在一定程度上改写了原文的伦 理结构和人物的斯芬克斯因子,同时也呼应和建构了目的语社会伦理禁忌和 伦理秩序的破旧立新; 另一方面, 对立地统一在一起, 表现出一定的悖论性, 进而导致林纾伦理观的悖论和林译小说伦理效果的悖论。

## (一)"中体"伦理身份:传统文化捍卫者

林纾的传统伦理观念是根深蒂固的,他将之作为根本的世界观和伦理准 则。他认为对儒家伦理的坚守是朝代延续和国家立足的根本所在,伦理道德 是否得到维系,决定家国的存亡:"易书诗礼及春秋之言,童子固不易知, 论语一书, 无所不包, 可以由浅入深, 何亦废之? 始基已不以父母为然, 又 何有于国家?"(林纾,《畏庐三集》28)他还在与"五四"青年论辩时指出, 清朝灭亡的根本原因在于动摇了传统伦理秩序: "剽窃西人皮毛,锄本根而 灌枝叶, 亡之病坐此耳"(28)。他甚至认为孔教道德可以成为全世界普世 价值: "吾夫子之德既足以取信于英德法诸哲学之大家,扩而充之,似亦可 暨乎全球,彼萤燐之微,万不生其烧天之焰,蹄涔之水亦无忧其泯夏之凶"(28)。

林纾更是在实践层面对传统伦理道德身体力行。例如,他对"孝"的践 行达到了极高程度。父亲病危时,向天请求代父受难;父亲去世时,痛哭不 已,以至于得了肺病:母亲重病时,侍疾四十九天,每夜四鼓起床,烧香拜佛, 并沿路拜祷至越王山的天坛上,风雨无阻,乞母平安(1-3);他甚至大力提

倡剮臂、剮股等现在被认为是愚孝的行为。林纾对"忠"的坚守可以说到了 遗老遗少的程度。他支持维新变法运动,属改良派,主张在君主的权威和领 导下推行社会政治改革。随后清王朝被推翻,皇帝退位,"忠"的对象瓦解, 为表达自己对君主的忠诚和怀念,他晚年多次拜谒光绪皇帝的陵墓; 1923年, 已经退位多年的皇帝溥仪大婚,林纾通过陈宝琛献上自己手绘的四镜屏,陈 宝琛还向溥仪讲述了林纾十谒崇陵之事,事后溥仪题写了"贞不绝俗"四字 赠予林纾, 林纾"犬马御恩, 九顿伏地, 呜咽不止"(林纾 67-68)。

因此,无论是伦理观还是伦理实践,林纾都是传统伦理的坚定捍卫者, 这是他的主要伦理身份。

传统伦理捍卫者这一"中体"身份使得林纾在翻译过程中在一定程度上 改写了原文。首先, 改写了原文的伦理结构。伦理结构是指以人物的思想和 行为为线索的文本结构,它有四种基本构成,即人物关系、思维活动、行为 和规范(聂珍钊,《文学伦理学批评导论》260)。人物关系是指人物之间的 关系构成; 思维活动是指人物的逻辑思维过程, 包括情感的产生和变化、逻 辑判断、逻辑推理以及由此产生的意志,表现为意识结构和表达结构:行为 是思维活动的外在表现和客观载体;规范是思维和行为所需遵循的伦理。林 经时刻堤防西方伦理事实对儒家伦理系统可能造成的冲击, 尽量将前者纳入 后者的体系中,以中化西,因而采用了上述五种手段中的四种即替代、改写、 删除和增添来实现他的"中体"伦理观,这就导致了译文呈现出的伦理结构 与原文的伦理结构不完全相同。在伦理结构的四个要素中,人物关系作为小 说情节发展的基础,基本上都得到了保留,例如亨利与伽茵之间的情人关系、 亨利父亲与亨利之间的父子关系等,但其它三种构成均有所改变。第一,思 维活动。上述《巴黎茶花女遗事》原文以第一人称自叙的表达结构描述了亚 猛在与马克性爱过程中的意识结构:他狂热地爱着马克,对她的爱由此得到 了升华,并产生了独占欲望。对于这一思维活动,林纾仅以一句"是夜情景 甚冰冷,不可意测"一笔带过,译文的表达结构变成了第三者视角的、暗示 过于模糊的一句简单叙述,意识结构被删除,而且"冰冷"一词并不能衬托 出或者让读者想象出屋内二人的狂热。译文的思维活动与原文不一致。第二, 行为。在《巴黎茶花女遗事》原文中,女主人公马克在母亲死时表现出的伤 心程度,不如后来自己的狗死时的伤心程度,这个行为在译文中被删除了。 第三,规范。林纾将原文的伦理规范改造为或纳入中国传统伦理规范,例如, 对于上述《伽茵小传》亨利与临终前父亲的对话,林纾增译了"必违父训, 父招不从"一句,把纲常伦理和孝道作为父子关系的规范,而这种规范在原 文中是不存在的。总之,原文的伦理结构在翻译过程中被改写了,使得译文 呈现出不一样的面貌,这种改写是林纾的传统伦理捍卫者这一伦理身份使然。

其次,原文人物的斯芬克斯因子也被改写。斯芬克斯因子(Sphinx factor)是文学批评伦理学受人类学家利奇(E.R.Leach)的"人性/兽性"

(humanity/animality) 概念启发而提出的基本术语(陈红薇 15),它是指人 性因子和兽性因子形成的矛盾统一体。人性因子(human factor)是指人的伦 理意识,以理性意志为表现形式,以分辨善恶的能力为最重要特征,它约束 和控制兽性因子。兽性因子(animal factor)是人的动物性本能的体现,是人 在讲化过程中的兽性残留,以自然意志为表现形式。在斯芬克斯因子中,人 性因子是高级的、主导性因子, 兽性因子是低级的、从属性因子, 前者控制 后者,从而使人成为伦理的人(聂珍钊,《文学伦理学批评导论》274-76)。 林纾在翻译过程中对原文人物进行伦理改造,导致人物在译文中呈现出不同 的人性因子、兽性因子和斯芬克斯因子。以上述《伽茵小传》中亨利与临终 父亲吵架一幕为例,原文对这场吵架的描述并不一定含有道德评价,因为在 当时维多利亚时代晚期的伦理环境下,子女因自己的婚恋选择与父母不一致 时发生"轻微的争吵"(即原文的"some quarrel"),大致上属于正常现象; 如果非要判出个谁是谁非的话,也许错在父母一方,因为他们没有尊重子女 自由选择的权力。而林纾通过增添"父训"和"父招"二词将父子之间的伦 理规范拔高, 提高人性因子的衡量标准, 从而降低亨利身上的人性因子, 增 强其兽性因子的分量,二者比重的变化导致斯芬克斯因子也出现变化,亨利 因此呈现出"不孝"的伦理面貌。

## (二)"西用"伦理身份:维新派

林纾与当时的许多有识之士和先进知识分子一样,对民族的现状深感忧 虑,赞成变法和改良:"余老而弗慧,日益顽固,然每闻青年人论变法,未 尝不低首称善"(吴俊 18-19)。他还与"戊戌六君子"之一的林旭交往甚密, 在后者的影响下成为维新变法的坚定拥护者。"戊戌政变"失败后,林纾悲 痛欲绝。随后,他提出"实业救国"、"教育救国"等主张,并克服自己不 懂外语的劣势,与人合译西方小说,试图实现"译书救国"的目的。因此, 无论从思想上还是在行动上,林纾都可以算作维新派的一员。这是他的第二 种伦理身份。维新派采取改良主义路线,主张在维持现行帝制和封建土地制 度的前提下,在各个领域实行大刀阔斧的改革。与此相一致,林纾的伦理观 自然也有革新的一面,这表现在他赞同自由、专一的婚恋伦理,提倡女权和 女学,呼吁适当学习西方人的贼性和冒险精神以改善国民性中的奴性和中庸 之道。

第一,自由、专一的婚恋伦理。林纾对女性在婚姻中的一些不幸事件深 表同情,赞同婚恋自由,他感叹道:"呜呼!婚姻自由,仁政也,苟从文, 女子终身无菀枯之叹矣"(林纾,"红礁画桨录•序"226)。林纾还对用情 专一的一夫一妻制表达了赞赏。他将西方情爱小说模式归纳为"非两女争一 男者,则两男争一女",这种"三角恋"模式既反映出无论男女,无论地位 高低,即便低贱的妓女,都有平等追求爱情的权力,还表明爱情具有强烈的 排他性,男女需彼此专一。他翻译的小说很少有滥情的情节,他认为"男女 之爱,非专莫可。男不专女,必有一人抱幽怨而终者。女不专男,亦必无一 人患难足恃者"(林纾,《畏庐漫录》42)。小说中表现出的这种专一的婚 恋伦理无疑是对晚清一夫多妻封建伦理的挑战。

第二,倡女权、兴女学。在亡国灭种的危机下,有识之士呼吁"新民"、 "启蒙",培养国民的革新意识和培育新一代国民,而新国民的培养很大程 度上取决于母亲的素质,母亲以及所有女性的解放、教育和素质提升是强国 保种的重要基础。在此背景下,林纾的性别伦理观开始偏向于女性,他大力 提倡女权和兴办女学。一方面,他在一定程度上提倡妇女权利,反对缠足, "奉劝人间足莫缠,人间父母心如铁,听侬诉苦心应折"(林纾,"红礁画 桨录•序"226)。另一方面把女学与爱国伦理联系在一起,在"兴女学"一 诗中写道: "母明大义念国仇,朝暮话儿怀心头。儿成便蓄报国志,四万万 人同作气。女学之兴系匪轻,兴亚之事当其成。"他还认为兴女学是倡女权 的基础:"故欲倡女权,必兴女学"(227)。

第三,提倡"贼性"和冒险精神。从林纾所写的译序和文章来看,他将 国民的劣根性大致归为两种,即奴性和中庸。他认为埃及之所以亡国就是因 为奴性太重, 先后受到希腊、罗马、阿拉伯、土耳其和英国的侵略, 而国民 却不以国家为重,不闭结一致抵御外敌,甘愿被奴。他意识到,晚清的中国 与当时的埃及极其相似:面对强敌入侵,中国人"顿首俯伏,哀鸣如牛狗, 既不得生,始匍匐就刑,至于凌贱蹴踏,惨无人理,亦甘受之"(林纾,"《鬼 山狼侠传》叙"102)。他还痛恨晚清社会和官场盛行的庸俗的中庸之道,这 种"不求有功,但求无过"的心态使得社会缺少前进的动力,无法与列强抗衡。

这种"西用"的伦理身份和伦理观使得林纾在翻译过程中选择保留原文 中符合他"维新"诉求的伦理事实,因而呼应并推动了晚清社会当时即将松 动的伦理禁忌和伦理秩序。伦理禁忌是人类力图对自身兽性即原始欲望加以 控制而形成的伦理规范(如乱伦禁忌)。它被制度化之后即形成伦理秩序, 是伦理秩序形成的基础和运行的保障(聂珍钊,《文学伦理学批评导论》 261)。伦理禁忌的松动、加强或改变,会导致伦理秩序的变化。林译小说对 晚清社会伦理禁忌和伦理秩序的呼应和建构以以下三个方面(与上述"西用" 伦理身份下的三个伦理观相一致)为例进行说明。

第一,家庭和婚恋方面。在中国封建社会,"父为子纲"、"父母之命, 媒妁之言"是家庭和婚恋的伦理规范:反之,违背父母之命则在一定程度上 是伦理禁忌("不孝")。在晚清内忧外患、"穷则思变"的语境下,伦理 规范的约束力不断减弱,伦理禁忌逐渐稀释,伦理秩序处于破旧立新的过渡期。 在《伽茵小传》中,亨利违背父亲临终嘱托,不肯与爱玛结婚,而要迎娶伽茵, 并因此与父亲吵架; 伽茵也公然指责父亲遗弃了她。林纾暗示和批评这两个 人违背了"孝道",但仍然保留了这一事实,并完整译出二者不顾名利地位 和道德约束而追求纯洁爱情的过程。这种以及类似的伦理选择反而使得林译

小说风靡一时,取得了很好的社会效果,表现之一就是许多读者都同情伽茵 的命运和境遇,郭沫若(117)就表示: "我最初读的是 Haggard 的《伽茵小 传》。那女主人公的伽茵是怎样的引起了我深厚的同情,诱出了我无限的眼泪! 我很爱怜她,我也很羡慕她的爱人亨利。"鲁迅、冰心等青年也一定程度上 受到了林纾译文的影响而逐渐走上新文化运动之路。这说明父母之命、父为 子纲的传统伦理已开始逐渐让位于纯真爱情之伦理: 只要相爱男女追求的是 纯真爱情,无论违背什么伦理,都是值得赞颂的。"不孝"这一伦理禁忌开 始松动,父母与子女之间的关系开始摆脱"纲常"的束缚,"父母之命,媒 妁之言"的传统婚恋伦理开始朝着自由恋爱的方向发展,因此家庭和婚恋方 面的伦理秩序开始重新构建。

第二,性别伦理方面。中国封建社会一直以"女子无才便是德"作为对 女性的禁锢,女子若上学接受了教育,就可能变得"聪明"和"叛逆",因 此女学就在一定程度上具有禁忌的特征。林纾保留甚至夸大符合他女权和女 学思想的词语或情节。例如,《伽茵小传》原文的开场部分在描述伽茵的性 格时, 使用 "enjoyed a certain measure of education" (受过一点教育) 这一短 语,而林纾、魏易(6)将它译为"美文而通,复涉猎文史",很显然属于过 度翻译(over-translation),夸大了伽茵的受教育水平。不仅此处如此,在林 纾的翻译过程中,凡是涉及伽茵"学问"的描述均被保留且被夸大翻译(潘 红 400)。事实上,伽茵的受教育水平远非林译描述的那么高。原文第一章有 过交代: 她在学校读书年头不多, 且表现非常平庸, 毕业后连一份家庭教师 的工作都难以得到。林纾选择保留且夸大她的教育水平,是在挑战"女子无 才便是德"这一针对女性的性别歧视和伦理禁锢,鼓励女性走出闺房接受教育, 从而培育"国民之母",最终改善国民素质。五四前后,女性开始大量进入 新式学堂接受教育,还成立了许多专门的女子学校,女权和女学面貌焕然一新。 这不一定是林译小说建构的结果,但林译小说至少顺应了这一潮流,甚至可 能在一定程度上推动了性别伦理秩序的变化。

第三, 国民性格伦理方面。将冒险精神和贼性从伦理禁忌的地位提升到 积极的伦理规范的地位,将中庸和奴性降低至伦理禁忌的地位。一方面,林 纾通过保留外国小说中的冒险意识来"医治"国民的中庸这一劣根性。他先 后翻译了《鲁宾逊漂流记》、《雾中人》等多部探险小说,书中的主人公在 非洲探险过程中,为了得到宝藏和财宝,九死一生,百折不挠,表现出强烈 的拼搏精神,而这种拼搏精神正是面临亡国灭种危机的国人所需要具备的品 质。另一方面,他还通过保留《黑奴吁天录》等小说原文中人物利用基督教 某些教义反对和质疑奴隶制的言行,并删除基督教中劝人忍让、纵容侵略、 接受奴役的说辞,来鼓励国民奋起反抗列强的侵略,拒绝被奴役。冒险精神 和贼性地位提升,中庸和奴性地位下降,在这一升一降之间,国民性格伦理 秩序发生了变化,朝着积极进取的方向迈进。

## (三) 悖论

"中体西用"伦理身份本身就蕴含着悖论:在同一个框架内,"体"(传 统伦理维护者)的因素与"用"(维新派)的因素本应该是一个此消彼长的 动态关系,前者的过度发展可能会威胁到后者的地位,并可能最终取代后者, 但在体用模式下,二者的相对地位已经预先设定了,"用"不能超过"体", 只能在"体"允许的范围内运作。林译小说中,中国传统伦理秩序需要引进 新的异质因素以实现自身变革,但同时又对这种异质伦理保持警惕,将它控 制在可控范围内。伦理身份的这种悖论导致他伦理观的悖论和林译小说社会 效果的悖论。

## 1. 伦理观的悖论

林纾伦理观的悖论性主要表现在: 他既期待男女婚姻自由, 却又将婚姻 纳入传统的"礼"的体系内:倡导女学和女权,而其目的却是为了让女性更 好地遵守传统伦理道德;希望国人适当地学习西方人的贼性,却又对之保持 警惕。

第一,他所赞同的婚姻自由需符合"礼"的规范。在爱情小说的翻译中, 他以"礼"主导男女之间的关系,使爱情场景呈现出"礼"的氛围。例如, 他将伽茵和亨利之间的热烈拥吻翻译成"伸手为礼"。这源于他的婚恋伦理观: "婚姻自由,仁政也。苟从之,女子终身无菀枯之叹矣。要当律之以礼"(林纾, "红礁画桨录•序"227)。寒光也认为林纾太注重"礼":"他太守着旧礼教, 把礼字看得很重,不但他自己的言论和作品,就是翻译中有稍微越出范围的, 他也动言'礼防',几于无书不然!"(寒光99)

第二,虽然林纾兴女学的最终目的是强国保种,但直接目的却是让女性 更加懂得礼节、更好地坚守道德伦理。他的逻辑可能是:女性有了才智和学问, 才能对自己的言行作出符合道德标准的理性选择和更好地遵守伦理秩序,进 而教导出遵守伦理道德的子女,达到新民和启蒙的目的。他认为女子有才学, 其好处是: 在感情上"深于情而格于礼,爱而弗乱,情极势逼,至强死自明"; 在为人处事上"必能核计终身之利害,知苟且之事,无利于已,唾而不为"。 女子若无才学,坏处是:"惟无学而遽撤其防,无论中西,均将越礼而失节。" 他还举例说明: "人爱其类,男女均也。以积学之女,日居伧荒中,见一通 敏练达者,直同日星莺凤之照眼,恶能弗爱?爱而至死,而终不乱,谓非以 礼自律耶?"(林纾,"红礁画奖录•序"226)

第三,林纾尽管保留了原著中具有冒险精神和贼性的情节和言行,但他 对西方基督教新教伦理中具有侵略倾向的"贼性"、"盗性"等始终怀有戒 备之心。他在译序中明确提醒读者:"敬告读吾书者之青年挚爱学生,当知 畏庐居士之翻此书,非羡黎恩那之得超瑛尼,正欲吾中国严防行劫及灭种者 之盗也"(林纾,"雾中人•叙"233)。他还指出了西强中弱的根本原因和 中国作为被侵略者的应对之策: "吾华开化早,人人咸以文胜,流极所至,

往往出于荏弱。泰西自希腊、罗马后,英、法二国均蛮野,尚杀戮。……究 之脑门人、躬被文化而又尚武、遂轶出撒克逊不列颠之上、今日区区三岛凌 驾全球者, 非此杂种人耶? 故究武而暴, 则当范之以文: 好文而衰, 则又振 之以武"(林纾,"剑底鸳鸯•序"250)。

## 2. 伦理效果的悖论

林译小说在社会上引起的伦理效果存在悖论,既有共时的,也有历时的。 首先, 共时悖论。早期的林译小说在出版后不久即风靡全国, 轰动一时, 对于书中伦理观,有进步倾向的人士一般给予正面评价,个别极保守人士给 予负面评价。如本文第二部分的第一段所述,郭沫若(117)同情伽茵,喜欢 亨利,钱钟书(钱钟书等23-24)也反复阅读林译小说,进而对西洋文学产生 了兴趣; 而寅半生则怒斥其所传达的伦理道德为"淫"、"贱"和"无耻"(陈 平原、夏晓虹 249)。这种矛盾的评价源于当时伦理环境本身的矛盾性:中国 传统伦理禁忌在保守人士中仍是主流和本位,而新伦理观开始萌芽,得到进 步人士尤其是进步青年的拥护。

其次, 历时悖论。林译小说在具有进步倾向人群中的伦理效果经历了先 誉后毁的过程,其中的分界线是新文化运动。在新文化运动萌发之前,林译 小说好评如潮,因为其中传达的西方伦理事实和伦理观迎合了当时中国社会 变革求新的需求,具有很大的启蒙价值。新文化运动开始萌发后,林译小说 逐渐被读者抛弃。梁启超的评价颇具代表性,他在1920年写的《清代学术概 论》中指出:"林纾 ...... 每译一书,辄"因文见道",於新思想无与焉。"事 实上,如本文第二部分的第(二)节所述,林译小说中是有一些新思想的, 如自由的婚恋伦理、倡女权兴女学、提倡"贼性"和冒险精神等,但是,随 着革新的广度和深度不断加强,对传统文化和传统伦理的反对和鞭笞也愈加 激烈,新文化运动极力批判替圣贤立言的卫道文字,甚至试图彻底打倒旧礼。 教,提倡全盘西化,"中体西用"已经被打破。以传统伦理捍卫者为"中体" 身份的林纾及其所译小说自然就"被动地"站到了新文化运动的对立面,遭 到了猛烈攻击。同一部林译小说在同一个人群中的评价前后不一,经历了先 誉后毁的过程, 其原因是社会伦理禁忌、伦理秩序和伦理环境发生了巨大变化, 传统伦理秩序不断瓦解,其主体地位不断削弱,而新的伦理观念逐渐得到认可, 地位得以提升,伦理观的"中体西用"模式逐渐瓦解,"中"与"西"的地 位差逐渐被抹平甚至反转。

## 三、结论

本文借用文学伦理学批评的相关理论和术语,考察了林纾小说翻译过程 中的伦理选择和译者伦理身份,得出以下结论:

第一、翻译具有一定的伦理建构性。翻译在许多情况下并不能忠实传达 原文信息,尤其当原文中的伦理事实与目的语社会伦理观产生激烈冲突,或 者译者抱有特定伦理诉求时,对原文的改写就在所难免。译者可以选择完全 屈从于目的语社会的伦理禁忌,将原文的伦理系统最大程度上"归化"到目 的语伦理系统中,让读者感觉不到"异样",从而重新建构原文的伦理结构; 也可以出于自己独特的伦理诉求,采取"异化"策略,保留原文的"异样" 伦理事实,引入其中蕴含的伦理观,进而建构宏观层面的伦理秩序和伦理环境。 这种建构性是通过文学的基本功能即教诲功能(王松林 47)实现的:读者对 译文进行审美性阅读进而获得道德教诲(陈后亮41),头脑中的伦理观念得 以重构,社会伦理也因此得以破旧立新。

第二,翻译过程中的伦理选择既取决于译者伦理身份,又能建构译者伦 理身份。林纾对原文伦理事实既有改写也有保留,这种伦理选择取决于他传 统伦理捍卫者和维新派合为一体的"中体西用"伦理身份。这种身份本身蕴 涵的悖论,导致他伦理观的悖论性和林译小说伦理效果的悖论性。这两种悖 论性又在一定程度上取决于伦理选择对于伦理身份的建构性: 伦理选择上的 既改写也保留使得林译小说呈现出中西伦理杂合的面貌, 从而建构了林纾的 "中体西用"伦理身份,但这种身份既不能让保守派满意也不可能让改良派 中的激进派满意,而这种通过所译小说建构出来的身份具有一定的稳定性, 当社会历史朝着更加革新的方向前进时,林纾就被五四青年们斥为固守传统 伦理的遗老遗少。

第三,文学翻译的伦理学批评还有待加强。本文尝试将文学伦理学批评 用于翻译研究,得到了有益的发现:翻译可能会改写原文的伦理结构和人物 的斯芬克斯因子,还可能呼应和建构目的语社会的伦理禁忌和伦理秩序。同时, 也发现文学翻译研究不能简单、机械地套用文学伦理学批评的相关理论和术 语,需做相应调整,如本文第一部分的第一段所述,翻译过程中的伦理选择 和伦理身份与文学伦理学批评中的伦理选择和伦理身份并不完全一致,因为 前者主要存在于文本跨语际转换过程中,而后者主要存在于单语种文本(至 少是在大多数情况下),一般不涉及跨语际转换。这就表明,文学伦理学批 评是文学翻译研究的一个有用的视角,但还需进一步思考二者结合的具体方 式,还需要大量的案例研究来充实和完善这一研究路径。

## **Works Cited**

韦恩·布斯:《小说修辞学》,华明等译。北京:北京联合出版公司,2017年。

[Booth, Wayne Clayson. The Rhetoric of Fiction. Trans. Hua Ming, etal. Beijing: Beijing United Publishing Co., Ltd., 2017.]

陈红薇: "文学伦理学批评:基于中西文化的文学批评理论创新",《文学跨学科研究》1(2021);

[Chen, Hongwei. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Critical Theoretical Innovation Based on the Chinese and Western Cultures." Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 1 (2021): 14-21.]

- 陈后亮: "搭建文学批评与社会现实的桥梁:文学伦理学批评的价值选择与理论建构",《文 学跨学科研究》1(2021): 38-45。
- [Chen, Houliang. "Bridging the Gap between Literary Criticism and the Social Reality: The Value Choice and Theoretical Construction of Ethical Literary Criticism." Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 1 (2021): 38-45.]
- 陈礼珍: "复兴与创新: 文学伦理学批评的过去、现状与未来",《文学跨学科研究》3(2019):
- [Chen, Lizhen. "Rejuvenation and Innovation: The Past, Present and Future of Ethical Literary Criticism." Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 3 (2019): 389-414.]
- 陈平原 夏晓虹: 《二十世纪中国小说理论资料》。北京: 北京大学出版社,1997年。
- [Chen, Pingyuan and Xia Xiaohong, eds. Materials for Theories of 20th-Century Chinese Novels. Beijing: Peking UP, 1997.]
- Dumas, A. La Dame aux Camelias. Trans. David Coward. Oxford: Oxford UP, 1986.
- 郭沫若: 《郭沫若选集》。成都: 四川人民出版社, 1979年。
- [Guo, Moruo. Selected Works of Guo Moruo. Chengdu: Sichuan People's Press, 1979.]
- Haggard, H.R. Joan Haste. London: Longmans, Green and Co., 1895.
- 哈葛德: 《伽茵小传》, 林纾 魏易 译。北京: 商务印书馆, 1981年。
- [Haggard, H.R. Joan Haste. Trans. Lin Shu and Wei Yi. Beijing: The Commercial Press, 1981.]
- 寒光: 《林琴南》。上海: 中华书局, 1935年。
- [Han, Guang. Lin Qinnan. Shanghai: Zhonghua Book Company, 1935.]
- 梁启超:《清代学术概论》。北京:中华书局,2011年。
- [Liang, Qichao. A Survey of Scholarly Research in Qing Dynasty. Shanghai: Zhonghua Book Company, 2011.1
- 林纾: 《畏庐漫录》。上海: 商务印书馆, 1925年。
- [Lin, Shu. "Lan Yun". Short Novels by Wei Lu. Shanghai: The Commercial Press, 1925.]
- ——:《畏庐三集》。上海:商务印书馆,1927年。
- [—. "A Narrative of My Risks". The Third Book of Wei Lu. Shanghai: The Commercial Press, 1927.]
- "红礁画桨录·序",《晚清文学丛钞·小说戏剧研究卷》阿英编。北京:中华书局,1960年, 226-27。
- [-... "Preface to Beatrice." Literature Materials in Late Qing Dynasty (Volume of Novels and Operas). Ed. A Ying. Beijing: Zhonghua Book Company, 1960. 226-27.]
- ——: "剑底鸳鸯·序",《晚清文学丛钞·小说戏剧研究卷》阿英编。北京: 中华书局, 1960 年, 250-51
- [-.. "Preface to The Betrothed." Literature Materials in Late Qing Dynasty (Volume of Novels and Operas). Ed. A Ying. Beijing: Zhonghua Book Company, 1960. 250-51.]
- —: "雾中人·叙", 《晚清文学丛钞·小说戏剧研究卷》阿英编。北京: 中华书局, 1960 年, 232-33。
- [—. "Preface to People of the Mist." Literature Materials in Late Qing Dynasty (Volume of Novels and

- Operas). Ed. A Ying. Beijing: Zhonghua Book Company, 1960. 232-233.]
- ——: "《鬼山狼侠传》叙",载吴俊编:《林琴南书话》。杭州:浙江人民出版社,1999年, 101-102。
- [-... "Preface to Nada the Lily." Essays by Lin Oinnan. Ed. Wu Jun. Hangzhou: People's Publishing House of Zhejiang, 1999. 101-102.]
- 马晓俐 郝祥建: "《绿茶》中的伦理身份与死亡冲动", 《世界文学研究论坛》3(2019): 499-508。
- [Ma, Xiaoli and Hao Xiangjian."Ethical Identities and Death Impulsion in Green Tea." Forum for World Literature Studies 3 (2019): 499-508.]
- 聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。
- [Nie, Zhenzhao. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]
- ——: "文学伦理学批评的价值选择与理论建构",《中国社会科学》10(2020):71-92。
- —. "Value Choice and the Theoretical Construction of Ethical Literary Criticism." Social Sciences in China 10 (2020): 71-92.]
- 潘红:《哈格德小说在晚清:话语意义与西方认知》。上海:复旦大学出版社,2019年。
- [Pan, Hong. Haggard's Novels in Late Qing Dynasty: Discursive Meaning and Recognition of the West. Shanghai: Fudan University Press, 2019.]
- 钱玄同: "通信", 《新青年》1(1917):17-18。
- [Qian, Xuantong. "Correspondence." New youth 1(1917):17-18.]
- 钱钟书等: 《林纾的翻译》。北京: 商务印书馆, 1981年。
- [Qian, Zhongshu, etal. Lin Shu's Translations. Beijing: The Commercial Press, 1981.]
- 查尔斯•罗斯: "文学伦理学批评的理论建构: 聂珍钊访谈录",《世界文学研究论坛》1(2015): 7-14
- [Ross, Charles. "A Conceptual Map of Ethical Literary Criticism: An Interview with Nie Zhenzhao." Forum for World Literature Studies 1 (2015): 7-14.]
- 尚必武: "文学伦理学批评: 伦理选择、伦理意识与伦理行动",《文学跨学科研究》1(2021):
- [Shang, Biwu."Ethical Literary Criticism: Ethical Choice, Ethical Consciousness, and Ethical Action." Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 1 (2021): 22-30.]
- 王松林: "'为诗一辩': 论文学的伦理教诲功能", 《文学跨学科研究》1(2021): 46-
- [Wang, Songlin."The Defence of Poesy': On the Ethical Teaching Function of Literature." *Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature* 1 (2021): 46-55.]
- 吴俊: 《林琴南书话》。杭州: 浙江人民出版社, 1999年。
- [Wu, Jun, Ed. Essays by Lin Oinnan. Hangzhou: People's Publishing House of Zhejiang, 1999.]
- 小仲马: 《巴黎茶花女遗事》,林纾、王寿昌译。北京:商务印书馆,1981年。
- Dumas, A. fils. The Lady of the Camellias. Trans. Lin Shu and Wang Shouchang. Beijing: The Commercial Press, 1896.]



## Published by Knowledge Hub Publishing Company Limitec Hong Kong

